

The sermon of the Lord Jesus Christ on the mount



The constitution of the Kingdom of heaven on earth.

Part 1 **The ladder of God's blessing bringing grace.**

(Mt. 5:1-12; Rev. 19:9)

Part 2 **Our earthly Divine calling: "And you shall be My witnesses".**

(Mt. 5:13-16)

Part 3 **The 10 fulfilled (perfect) laws of the Kingdom of heaven on earth (the Church), given by our Lord Jesus Christ.**

(Mt. 5:17-48, Mt. 6 and 7)

General note:

1. We generally have used the Amplified or King James Version of the Bible. One could, of course, when so desired, use any other Bible translation.
2. We have **frequently** added text between brackets in the Bible verses **to clarify the meaning of the Bible verses.**
3. In most cases where **he** or **him** is mentioned to point to **males** it also counts for **females.**
4. It is allowed to copy the study, on which way, when the source is mentioned.
5. If this study is a blessing for you, it's our wish that the message shall be passed on to others. We ask you in the first place to attend other people on our website. But you could also, as far as we are concerned, copy it (many times), and hand it out. A margin for profit is **not** allowed hereby. See note 4, above.

New make-over: February 2009

This and other studies from E. van den Worm can be downloaded for FREE from our website

www.endtime-messenger.com

The sermon of the Lord Jesus Christ on the mount:

Part 1

The ladder of God's blessing bringing grace

“For the grace of God, that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men”.

Titus 2:11

1.

Introduction

Tit. 2:11-14 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, 12 Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; 13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; 14 Who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

This study tells us about that, what God has given to His covenant children (and wher we have to take consciously part in), by our Lord Jesus Christ, through sharing the redemptive power of His death and resurrection which He has accomplished in the crosspoint of the ages. This study further tells us what He asks from us.

God's purpose with His covenant children.

1 Cor. 2:7-12 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory: 8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. 9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him. 10 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. 11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. 12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

Gen. 1:26 And God said, Let us make man **in our image, after our likeness**

He wants to recreate men, who **at the end** will have **the same glory as His eternal Son.**

Eph. 1:3-10 Blessed [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly [places] in Christ: 4 According as He hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: 5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, 6 To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He hath made us accepted in the beloved. 7 In Whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace; 8 Wherein He hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; 9 Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He hath purposed in Himself: 10 That in the dispensation of the fullness of times (i.e. in the end-time) He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven (the deceased souls), and which are on earth; even in Him

1 Jn. 3:2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is.

He wants to allot His covenant children – they, who have made a covenant with the Lord God – with His **perfect salvation bringing grace**, which He, **especially in the end-time**, wants to share out in all perfection **here on earth.**

Hab. 2:14 For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

Rev. 14:6 *And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having **the everlasting gospel** to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, **and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people***

This great purpose has been remained, even after man has fallen in sin by the temptation of satan¹, by which all offspring of Adam and Eve are born in original sin.

Ps. 51:5 *Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.*

Eph. 2:1-10 *And you [hath He quickened], who were dead in trespasses and sins; 2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and **were by nature the children of wrath**, even as others. 4 But God, Who is rich in mercy, for His great love wherewith He loved us, 5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved) 6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly [places] in Christ Jesus: 7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: [it is] **the gift of God**: 9 Not of works, lest any man should boast. 10 For we are **His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.***

Rom. 8:20-21 *For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected [the same] in hope, 21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.*

He will accomplish this salvation bringing grace in His covenant children, till His final purpose is achieved.

Eph. 4:13 *Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, **unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ***

2 Cor. 5:17 *Therefore if any man [be] in Christ, [he is] a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, **all things are become new.***

With "in Christ" is meant "living in the perfect Christ nature".

Mt. 13:43 *Then **shall the righteous shine forth as the sun** in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

1 Jn. 1:7 *But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin.*

Rev. 21:1-7 *And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. 2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven (this is not one action, but a continual communication with the throne of God in heaven) prepared as a bride adorned for her Husband. 3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God [is] with men, and He will dwell with (in) them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, [and be] their God. 4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, either shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. 5 And He that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And He said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. 6 And He said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. 7 He that overcometh shall **inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son.***

The Person of the Lord Jesus Christ.

He alone is the by our Father God given Person, Who will bring us up to God's ultimate aim. Here on earth He works in us through His Holy Spirit.

Jn. 3:16 *For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.*

Acts 2:36 *Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.*

Acts 4:12 *Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*

2 Cor. 3:17-18 *Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord [is], there [is] liberty. 18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, [even] as by the Spirit of the Lord.*

1 Tim. 2:5 *For [there is] one God, and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus;*

Hebr. 9:11-15 *But Christ being come an High Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; 12 Neither by the blood of goats and*

¹ We write the word satan not with a capital, as it is not a name, but a word meaning opponent or adversary, accuser.

calves, but by His own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained **eternal redemption** [for us]. 13 For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: 14 How much more shall **the blood of Christ**, Who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? 15 And for this cause He is the Mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions [that were] under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of **eternal inheritance**.

Zech. 4:6 Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, This [is] the word of the LORD unto Zerubbabel, saying, **Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith the LORD of hosts.**

Jesus' Divine heritage

By the proclamation of Jesus' Divine Testament – His Gospel. He offers **all men** His Divine heritage, obtained by the death and resurrection of the Lamb of God, our Lord Jesus Christ.

We partake in this Divine heritage by:

1. Our **faith in the redemptive and perfecting power of His shed Blood on Golgotha**,
2. Our **faith in the almighty redemptive power of our Lord Jesus Christ**, Who shares with us His heritage by and through His Holy Spirit,
3. Our **perfect repentance of all sins to God**,
4. Our **confession of our guilt**,
5. Our **daily surrender and opening of our being**, by which He is able to enter our body, soul and spirit to accomplish His salvation bringing grace,
6. **Continually fleeing from the might of sin and sinful circumstances, struggling in the power of the Holy Spirit against the temptations of sin, never leave the first love, the love for God and for our Lord Jesus Christ.**

2.

The statements of the Lord Jesus, forming the (9+1) steps of the ladder of His blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

- **Step 1: The poor in spirit.** Recognition of our lost state without His reconciling grace, being aware of our poverty in Divine life (Mt. 5:3).
- **Step 2: The mourning ones. Confession of sins. Faith in the reconciliation with God, faith in Jesus' redemptive power, looking at the cross of Golgotha** (Mt. 5:4).
- **Step 3: The meek ones. Beginning of the redemption of the might of our sins by His sharing His death on Golgotha. At our side: the meek acceptance of the process of the cross**, the death of the old, sinful old man in us by spiritually eating of His flesh and drinking of His blood, so willingly partaking in the death of God's Lamb. An experience, which Jesus has to let us go through (Mt. 5:5).
- **Step 4: They, who hunger and thirst after righteousness.** Hope, that He shares His resurrection life with us. Hunger and thirst after it. **Being born again out of God** (Mt. 5:6).
- **Step 5: The merciful ones.** This mercifulness is based on the love of God. Here God's love begins to break through. Further sharing in His resurrection life (Mt. 5:7).
- **Step 6: The pure in heart.** The perfect sharing in His redemption of the might of sin. These pure ones in heart live and walk in Divine pureness and holiness already here on earth (Mt. 5:8).
- **Step 7: The peacemakers.** Sharing in His anointed work (Mt. 5:9).
- **Step 8: The ones, which walk in Divine righteousness here on earth.** They are hated by satan and sinful men, and are persecuted by them (Mt. 5:10).
- **Step 9: They who live godly on earth.** They are fully drenched in the Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, and by this bear His Name. They are calumniated and persecuted because of His Name (Mt. 5:11-12, Rev. 3:12).

These are the 9 steps of the spiritual ladder of Jacob, which brings us to the throne of our heavenly Father and of the Lamb of God. They reveal a spiritual growth up to the perfection of the new man in Christ. On earth a growing, negative experience of life among the fellow men is our part by the growing might of satan, the might of darkness, especially in the end-time.

Rev. 22:11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

Mt. 24:12 And **because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.**

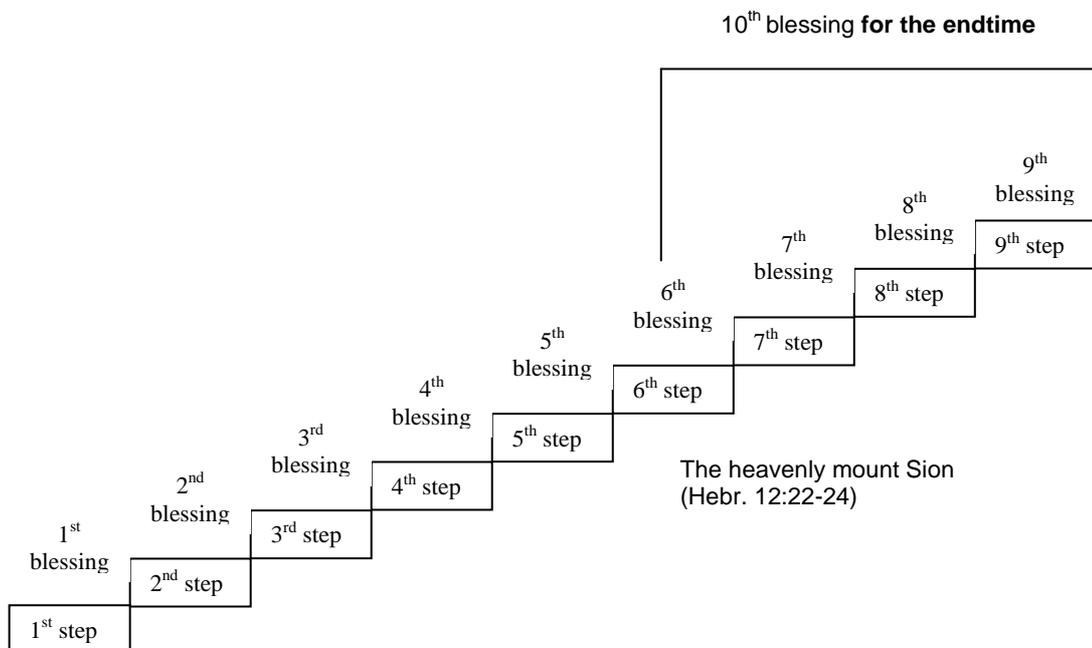
Eze. 21:25 And thou, profane wicked prince of Israel, whose day is come, when iniquity [shall have] an end. (AV)

And you, O slain, wicked prince of Israel, of whom has come his day in the time of iniquity of the end(time). (literal translation)

This utmost iniquity happens in the time of the anti-christ. In this end-time the Lord Jesus Christ, Who Himself is the Living Word of God, in His Word has added a **10th salvation (blessing) bringing step**. This step brings not but a single child of God or a few perfect, sanctified children of God about, but a **whole Church** of perfect sanctified souls, the **Bride Church – in which the 144.000 develop**. This Bride Church consists out of **the halve of all true children of God** – the so-called “wise virgins”, Mt. 25:2. For further study on this subject, see our website: “The wise and foolish virgins” (which can be freely downloaded from our website: www.endtime-messenger.com).

With this Bride Church the Lord Jesus has a Divine instrument for restoration of the Church, world wide, and for bringing about the great world wide revival, which bring countless souls in the Kingdom of God (see Rev. 7:9).

- **Step 10:** the final blessing (salvation) bringing grace, destined for the end-time: **Blessed are they, which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb**. Sharing the membership of the Bride Church. Clothed, inwardly and outwardly, with the glory of God and with His Divine, kingly authority and power already on earth. The glory of the Bride revealed on earth, the manifestation of the sons of God (Rom. 8:19).



Scheme of the 9+1=10 blessing bringing steps of the ladder of Gods’ grace.

3.

The 1st step of God’s blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are the poor in spirit.

The acknowledgement of the own sinful state and poverty of real, spiritual life.

Mt. 5:3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the Kingdom of heaven.

The natural, carnal man discovers – being on the first step of this ladder – that he is poor in spiritual, divine life. His spiritual poverty is complete. He discovers that he lives in the dimension of darkness. He converts himself to God and his Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ.

Rom. 7:13-25 Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful. 14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. 15 For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. 16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that [it is] good. 17 Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. 18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but [how] to perform that which is good I find not. 19 For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. 20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. 21 I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. 22 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: 23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

Jesus Christ, the only by God given Redeemer and Saviour, given to the whole of mankind.

Acts 4:12 *Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*

Mt. 1:21 *And she (Mary) shall bring forth a Son, and thou shalt call His name JESUS: for He shall save His people from their sins.*

Jn. 1:12 *But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to **become** the sons of God, even to them that believe on His Name:*

When we have accepted Jesus we are not yet children of God, but we will **become** so.

Jn. 3:16 *For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.*

Acts 10:43 *To Him give all the prophets witness, that through His Name whosoever believeth in Him shall receive remission of sins.*

1 Cor. 1:30 *But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, Who of God is made unto us **wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:***

1 Tim. 2:5 *For [there is] **one** God, and **one** Mediator between God and men, **the Man Christ Jesus***

The Spirit of our Lord Jesus Christ and His Word are **the only light** on our path of life.

Jn. 1:1-5, 9 *That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; 2 For the life was manifested, and we have seen [it], and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;) 3 That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship [is] with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ. 4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full. 5 This then is the message which we have heard of Him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all. 9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us [our] sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*

Jn. 8:12 *Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the Light of the world: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.*

1 Jn. 1:7 *But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin.*

Our Lord Jesus Christ is the living Word, which lightens us through the labour of the called and anointed preachers.

Ps. 119:105, 130, 140 *Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path. 130 The entrance of Thy Words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple. 140 Thy Word is very pure: therefore Thy servant loveth it.*

Rom. 10:14-15 *How then shall they call on Him in Whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in Him of Whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? 15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!*

God's anointed Word reveals the poverty of our inner man. His Word, anointed by the Spirit of God is our eyesalve, which takes away our spiritual blindness.

Jn. 16:8 *And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:*

Rev. 3:18 *I counsel thee to buy of Me gold (picture of the divine life) tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment (picture of divine holiness), that thou mayest be clothed, and [that] the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve (picture of divine knowledge and wisdom), that thou mayest see.*

Eph. 1:17-20 *That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him: 18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is **the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, 19 And what [is] the exceeding greatness of His power to us-ward who believe,** according to the working of His mighty power, 20 Which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and set [Him] at His own right hand in the heavenly [places]*

Eph. 2:1-9 *And you [hath He quickened], who were dead in trespasses and sins; 2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were **by nature the children of wrath**, even as others. 4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for His great love wherewith He loved us, 5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6 And hath raised us up*

together, and made [us] sit together **in heavenly [places]** in Christ Jesus: 7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of His grace in [His] kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: **[it is] the gift of God:** 9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

Rom. 3:10-18 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: 11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. 12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. 13 Their throat [is] an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: 14 Whose mouth [is] full of cursing and bitterness: 15 Their feet [are] swift to shed blood: 16 Destruction and misery [are] in their ways: 17 And the way of peace have they not known: 18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

Here we have the 14-fold accusation of the heavenly Justice, by which man, fallen in sin, is charged with.

Rom. 8:20-21 For the creature was made subject to vanity (to sin), not willingly, but by reason of him (satan) who hath subjected [the same] (by bringing about the original sin in human life. God in His wisdom had admitted this action of satan in hope (that man will repent himself to Him), 21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

With "vanity" is meant, that human life brings forth no eternal fruit, ever before judgement bringing sin.

Ps. 51:5 Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.

Jer. 17:9-10 The heart [is] deceitful above all [things], and desperately wicked: who can know it? 10 I the LORD search the heart (picture of our will to love Him), [I] try the reins (letterl. vert. kidneys), even to give every man according to his ways, [and] according to the fruit of his doings.

The kidneys are the catalysts of the human body for secretion of all gifts. Spiritually they points to our good will to be delivered of all sin, our good will to be converted to God.

What we have to do, when God's light comes over us.

1. We have to acknowledge before God the poverty of our spiritual state.

2 Chr. 7:13-14 If I shut up heaven that there be no rain, or if I command the locusts to devour the land, or if I send pestilence among My people; 14 If My people, which are called by My Name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

2. We have to repent and turn to to God and to our Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Chr. 16: 9a For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew Himself strong in the behalf of [them] whose heart [is] perfect toward Him.

Eze. 33:11 Say unto them, [As] I live, saith the Lord GOD, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die, O house of Israel?

Acts 17:30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men everywhere to repent

3. We must have faith in the power of the Lord Jesus Christ to save us.

Jn. 1:12 But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to **become** the sons of God, [even] to them that believe on His Name:

Jn. 3:16 For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Jn. 3:36 The (one) believimg the Son has eternal life, but the (one) disobeying the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God remains on him. (literal transl.)

Jn. 6:47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me hath everlasting life.

Eph. 1:19-20 And what [is] the exceeding greatness of His power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of His mighty power, 20 Which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and set [Him] at His own right hand in the heavenly [places]

Faith is a gift of God.

Eph. 2:8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: **[it is] the gift of God**

Rom. 12:3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think [of himself] more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man **the measure of faith.**

Faith has to grow up to maturity, from babes in Christ up to the maturity in Christ.

Eph. 4:13-16 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, **unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:** 14 That we [henceforth] be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, [and] cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, Which is the Head, [even] Christ: 16 From Whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

4. **We must be willing to be saved.** God has given us a free will. We have to open our body, soul and spirit for Him, so the King of honour is able to enter and build in His salvation bringing work in our body, soul and spirit.

Ps. 24:7-10 Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors (these gates, doors, points to our ears, will and heart, the doors of our body, soul and spirit) ; and the King of glory shall come in. 8 Who [is] this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle. 9 Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift [them] up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. 10 Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, he [is] the King of glory.

Isa. 40:3 The voice of him (the called and anointed laborer of Christ) that crieth in the wilderness (of the sinful human heart), Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert (of your sinful self) a highway for our God.

Rev. 3:20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me.

5. **We have to come in prayer before Him.**

Mt. 11:28-30 Come unto Me (Jesus), all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take My yoke (your cross) upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 30 For My yoke [is] easy, and My burden is light.

Isa 1:18 Come now, and let us reason **together**, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

6. **We have remain open continually for His grace bringing work.**

2 Cor. 4:10-11 Always bearing about in the body **the dying of the Lord Jesus**, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body. 11 For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

7. **We have to confess our sins before Him.**

1 Jn. 1:9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

Ps. 32:5 I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin.

Prov. 28:13 He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

Isa. 59:1-2 Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: 2 But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid [his] face from you, **that he will not hear.**

8. **We have to obey Him in our further life.**

Jn. 3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

The (one) believing the Son has eternal life, but the (one) disobeying the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God remains on him. (literal transl.)

4.

The 2nd step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are they that mourn.

We mourn, because sin so often still reigns in our heart and life. Then we confess our sins and have faith in reconciliation with God. Hereby we look in faith on the cross at Golgotha, where Jesus has accomplished our reconciliation with God for ever.

Ps. 119:136 Rivers of waters run down mine eyes, because they keep not Thy law.

We discover in God's light of Word and Spirit:

1. **That sin still so often reigns in our mind, heart and life,** in spite of our good intentions.

Jn. 16:8 And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:

His Spirit convinces us of our sins.

2. **That we, in own human power** – by doing our very best – **are not able to come forth out of darkness of sin**, and mourn therefore about it.

Rom. 7:13-25 The complete verses are already mentioned in chapter 3 (The 1st step of God's blessing bringing grace) under "Blessed are the poor in spirit"

Mt. 26:41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

3. **That we only partially keep our outward man under control by denying our sinful nature**, and by fighting against it. But if the temptation is too strong, we again fall into sin because of our weakness.

Lk. 9:23a And He said to them all, If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself.

4. **That we can be redeemed from our sinful nature, and from our committed sins, by Jesus only. These sins we have to confess.** We, together with Jesus, have to wash them in the Blood of God's Lamb.

Mt. 11:28-29 Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take My yoke (your personal cross) upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

1 Jn. 1:9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

James 5:16 Confess your faults one to another (to the person against whom we have made yourselves guilty), and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

We have to confess our committed sins also towards people, against whom we have trodden in transgression.

Hebr. 12:1-2 Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight (every big sin), and the sin which doth so easily beset us (the small transgressions), and let us run with patience the race (for bringing about the victory over sin by keeping faithfully the cross-way) that is set before us, 2 Looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of [our] faith; Who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Hebr. 10:21-22 And [having] an High Priest over the house of God; 22 Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

Acts 24:16 And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and [toward] men.

Ps. 32:5 I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin.

Ps. 103:12 As far as the east is from the west, so far hath He removed our transgressions from us.

Prov. 28:13 He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh [them] shall have mercy.

Isa. 1:18 Come now, and let us **reason together**, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

Isa. 40:1-2 Comfort ye, comfort ye My people, saith your God. 2 Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the LORD'S hand double for all her sins (forgiveness **and** divine life).

Rev. 7:14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

1 Petr. 3:21 The like figure whereunto [even] baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience – purified in the blood of God's Lamb – toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ

A cleansed conscience is needed, when we want to be baptised in water. **If we don't confess our sins, He doesn't hear our prayer!**

Isa. 59:1-2 Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither His ear heavy, that it cannot hear: 2 But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid [His] face from you, **that he will not hear.**

5. **That He as God's Lamb has completely paid the penalty for our sins on Golgotha.** By this He has reconciled us with the Father, by which we may receive remission of sins.

Isa. 53:4-12 Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. 5 But He [was] wounded **for our transgressions**, He was bruised for our **iniquities**: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed. 6 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on Him (on Jesus) the iniquity of us all. 7 He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not His mouth. 8 He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare His generation? for He was cut off out of the land of the living: **for the transgression of my people** was He stricken. 9 And He made His grave with the wicked (the murderers which were crucified together with Him), and with the rich in His death (He was laid in the grave of Joseph of Arimathea) ; because He had done no violence, neither [was any] deceit in His mouth. 10 **Yet it pleased the LORD (JaHWeH) to bruise him**; He hath put [Him] to grief: when Thou shalt make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see [His] seed (the repented souls, who by His grace are made children of God) , He shall prolong His days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in His hand. 11 He shall see of the travail of His soul, [and] shall be satisfied: by His knowledge shall My righteous Servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities. 12 Therefore will I divide Him [a portion] with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong; because He hath poured out His soul unto death: and He was numbered with the transgressors; and He bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

Jn. 3:14-21 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up (crucified): 15 That whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have eternal life. 16 **For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.** 17 For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; **but that the world through Him might be saved.** 18 He that believeth on Him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the Name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that Light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than Light, because their deeds were evil. 20 For every one that doeth evil hateth the Light, neither cometh to the Light, lest his deeds should be reproved. 21 But he that doeth truth cometh to the Light, that s deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

2 Cor. 5:21 For he hath made Him [to be] sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made **the righteousness of God** in Him.

Hebr. 4:14-16 Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast [our] profession. 15 For we have not an High Priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as [we are, yet] without sin. 16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

5.

The 3rd step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are the meek.

The meek acceptance of God's sharing in the death and resurrection of the Lamb of God. Beginning of the redemption of the might of sin.

Mt. 5:5 *Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.*

Now the redemptive work of the Lord Jesus Christ can really begin in our personal being. Now Jesus, as God's Mediator, shares with us His death and resurrection, accomplished at the cross at Golgotha. Now He really deals with the curse and slavery, which reigns in our old, sinful life. He shares with us **the purifying Fire if His Spirit, conform the law of the Spirit of life.**

Mt. 3:11-12 *I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and [with] fire: 12 Whose fan [is] in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.*

Rom. 8:2 *For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.*

Now He will truly purge the floor of our heart and life from all chaff (old, sinful life).

1 Jn. 3:8b *For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.*

What we have to do, because we have to co-operate with Him.

His grace doesn't happen **automatically** in us.

1. **We have to believe in Him as our Redeemer.**

Mt. 9:29 *Then touched He their eyes, saying, according to your faith be it unto you.*

Jn .3:16 For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

2. **We must have faith, that He is able to redeem, purify and sanctify us for 100%, already here on earth,** because He has accomplished a **perfect** redemption for us on Golgotha.

Jn. 8:36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall **be free indeed**.

Eph. 5:26-27 That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 That He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, **not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.**

Hebr. 7:25 Wherefore He is able also to save them **to the uttermost** that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them.

Hebr. 9:11-12 Already mentioned under "The Person of the Lord Jesus Christ" in chapter one (incl. notes)

Hebr. 9:14-15 How much more shall the blood of Christ, Who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? 15 And for this cause **He is the Mediator of the new testament**, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions [that were] under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Hebr. 10:14 For by one offering He hath **perfected for ever** them that are sanctified.

1 Petr. 2:24 Who His own Self bare our sins in His own body on the tree (literally: on the wood, i.e. the cross), that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by Whose stripes ye were healed.

This 100% cleansing, sanctifying, already on earth, is accepted by sincere believers not before the end-time.

Rev. 12:11 And they overcame him (satan) by the blood of the Lamb, and by the Word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death (unto their sinful lives are totally mortified).

3. **His faith has to grow up to maturity.**

Col. 1:23 If ye continue in the faith **grounded and settled**, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister

4. **We have to meet Him in prayer.**

Mt. 11:28-30 Come unto Me (Jesus), all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take My yoke (your personal cross) upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 30 For My yoke is easy, and My burden is light.

Isa. 1:18 Come now, and **let us reason together**, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

5. **We have to wash (purify) ourselves in His Blood, as He likewise has to do so with us.**

Rev. 7:14b These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have **washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**

Rev. 1:5 And from Jesus Christ, Who is the faithful Witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth. Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood

6. **We have to put off in His power our old, sinful man, and hunger after our complete redemption.**

Ps. 51:10 Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.

Rom. 6:5 For if we have been **planted together in the likeness of his death**, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection

Rom. 8:15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

Rom. 12:1-3 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, [which is] your reasonable service. 2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. 3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

Verse 1 points to our body, verse 2 on our soul, and verse 3 on our spirit.

Gal. 5:24 And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

Eph. 4:22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts

Col. 3:5 *Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry*

7. We have to open our inner man for Him, and accept Him as our Redeemer and Saviour.

Jn. 1:12 *But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His Name*

Ps. 24:7-10 *Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. 8 Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle. 9 Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift [them] up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. 10 Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, He [is] the King of glory.*

He is the King of glory, Who will enter our body, soul and spirit, in order that He may build in His accomplished work at Golgotha and His resurrection.

Isa. 40:3 *The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness: Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.*

It is His voice, through His called and anointed servants, which cries in the wilderness of our hearts, to open a highway for Him, so that He is able to build in, redemption and salvation in our sinful heart and life.

Rev. 3:20 *Behold, I stand at the door (of your heart), and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me.*

He comes in us, in and through His Holy Spirit, and cleanses our heart and life in His purifying Fire.

Mt. 3:11-12 *I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and [with] fire: 12 Whose fan [is] in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor (the treshing-floor of your conversed heart), and gather His wheat (your purified, born again heart) into the garner (picture of His Kingdom); but He will burn up the chaff (your old, sinful life) with unquenchable fire.*

Lk. 11:13 *If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them **that ask Him?***

8. He will make His Holy Spirit to flow in us continually, as long as we keep our heart open for Him.

2 Kings 4:1-6 *Now there cried a certain woman of the wives of the sons of the prophets unto Elisha, saying, Thy servant my husband is dead; and thou knowest that thy servant did fear the LORD: and the creditor is come to take unto him my two sons to be bondmen. 2 And Elisha said unto her, What shall I do for thee? tell me, what hast thou in the house? And she said, Thine handmaid hath not any thing in the house, save a pot of oil (picture of the Holy Spirit). 3 Then he said, Go, borrow thee vessels abroad of all thy neighbours, [even] empty vessels; borrow not a few. 4 And when thou art come in, thou shalt shut the door upon thee and upon thy sons, and shalt pour out into all those vessels, and thou shalt set aside that which is full. 5 So she went from him, and shut the door upon her and upon her sons, who brought [the vessels] to her; and she poured out. 6 And it came to pass, when the vessels were full, that she said unto her son, Bring me yet a vessel. And he said unto her, [There is] not a vessel more. **And the oil stayed.***

9. We have to prefer the way of the cross with a meek heart. This way He has opened for us by His death at Golgotha. This personal way of the cross – we have to take up **our** cross personally – we have to choose this cross-way as our personal way of life. We have to accept this offer of God's grace, so that we are able to partake spiritually in it, independent of the suffering, which we have to bear for it.

Mal. 3:1-3 *Behold, I will send My messenger (a called and anointed servant of the Lord), and he shall prepare the way before Me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall **suddenly** come to His temple (your body, 1 Cor. 6:19), even the Messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in (the Spirit of our Lord Jesus Christ): behold, He shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. 2 But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when He appeareth? for He [is] like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap: 3 And He shall sit [as] a refiner and purifier of silver: and He shall purify the sons of Levi (picture of all called and anointed servants of the Lord), and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.*

Hebr. 12:1-2 *Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight (the big trespasses), and the sin which doth so easily beset [us] (the small trespasses), and let us run with patience the race that is set before us (the way of the cross), 2 Looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of [our] faith; Who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.*

On this way of the cross we have to listen to Him and to obey Him.

10. We have to put our old, sinful life on our altar of burnt sacrifice.

Isa. 61:8 *For I the LORD love judgement, I hate robbery for burnt offering (He hates partial sacrifice of the old, sinful man); and I will direct their work in truth, and I will make an everlasting covenant with them.*

Ps. 20:3 *Remember all thy offerings, and accept thy burnt sacrifice*

1 Cor. 5:7-8 *Purge out therefore the old leaven (the old, sinful nature), that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened (sinless). For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: 8 Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened [bread] of sincerity and truth.*

2 Cor. 7:1 *Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness** in the fear of God.*

We also have to do with the sin of implacability.

Mk. 11:25-26 *And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father Which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.*

Tempting our neighbour to commit sin is sinful too.

Mt. 18:6-7 *But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in Me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and [that] he were drowned in the depth of the sea. 7 Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!*

11. We have to be spiritually one plant with His death and resurrection.

Rom. 6:5 *For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also [in the likeness] of [His] resurrection*

12. We have to eat and drink spiritually His flesh and His Blood, so becoming one plant together with His death.

Jn. 6:53-54 *Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink His blood, ye have no life in you. 54 Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.*

13. We spiritually have to bear continually His death in our body.

2 Cor. 4:10-11 *Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body. 11 For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.*

14. We have to be willing to experience this redemption of the might of sin already here on earth.

Rom. 8:11 *But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your **mortal bodies** by His Spirit that dwelleth in you.*

Gal. 2:20 *I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me.*

Col. 1:13 *Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the Kingdom of His dear Son*

Isa. 9:4 *For thou hast broken the yoke of his (satan's) burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian (namely on Golgotha).*

Isa. 10:27 *And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] his (satan's) burden shall be taken away from off thy shoulder, and his yoke from off thy neck, and the yoke shall be destroyed because of the anointing (of the manifested power of the Holy Spirit).*

Mal. 3:1-3 *Behold, I will send My messenger (a called and anointed servant of the Lord), and he shall prepare the way before Me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall **suddenly** come (in and through the Holy Spirit) to His temple (the child of God), even the Messenger of the (Blood)covenant, Whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. 2 But who may abide the day of His coming? and who shall stand when He appeareth? for He [is] like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' (he who cleans the linen) soap: 3 And He shall sit [as] a refiner and purifier of silver: and He shall purify the sons of Levi (picture of all true, called and anointed servants of the Lord), and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.*

Rev. 12:11 *And they overcame him (satan) by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their old and sinful) lives unto the death (unto they are mortified).*

15. We have to expect this redemption already here on earth.

Isa. 30:18b *blessed are all they that wait for Him.*

Isa. 40:31 *But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.*

Lament. 3:25 *The LORD [is] good unto them that wait for him, to the soul [that] seeketh him.*

Ps. 37:9 For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the LORD, they shall inherit the earth.

Rom. 8:35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?

16. We have to persist in this redemption from sin.

Mt. 24:13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

Jn. 8:31-32 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on Him, If ye continue in My word, then are ye My disciples indeed; 32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

Acts 2:42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

17. This redemption from sin is a question of watching and struggling against the evil one.

Gen. 15:9-11, 17 And He said unto him, Take Me an heifer of three years old, and a she goat of three years old, and a ram of three years old, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon. 10 And he took unto Him all these, and divided them in the midst, and laid each piece one against another: but the birds divided he not. 11 And when the fowls (picture of satan tempting him) came down upon the carcasses, Abram drove them away. 17 And it came to pass, that, when the sun went down, and it was dark, behold a smoking furnace, and a burning lamp that passed between those pieces.

Prov. 4:23-27 Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it [are] the issues of life. 24 Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee. 25 Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee. 26 Ponder the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established. 27 Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil.

Isa. 54:17 No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue (satan's tongue, that inspires the sinner) that shall rise against thee in judgement thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of Me, saith the LORD.

Mk. 13:33-37 Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. 34 [For the Son of man is] as a man taking a far journey, who left his house (picture of the Church), and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch. 35 Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the Master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning: 36 Lest coming **suddenly** He find you sleeping. 37 And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

Mt. 12:43-45 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. 44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth [it] empty, swept, and garnished. 45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last [state] of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

Mt. 24:43 But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

Eph. 6:16 16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

2 Cor. 10:3-5 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: 4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) 5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ

1 Petr. 5:8-9 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: 9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

Rev. 12:7-11 And there was war in heaven: Michael (the in the Spirit returned Prince of Israel, Jesus, the Messiah) and His angels (picture of His called and anointed servants) fought against the (seven-headed sin)dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, 8 And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven (the Kingdom of heaven on earth, the Church). 9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil, and satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth (the place outside the true part of the Church), and his angels were cast out with him. 10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the Kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their (sinful, old) lives unto the death (unto it is mortified by the fire of the Spirit).

If we are redeemed from the curse of sin, we will inherit the Kingdom of God as kings and priests.

Mt. 5:5 Blessed [are] the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Col. 1:13 *Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son*

1 Petr. 2:9 *But ye [are] a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvellous light*

Rev. 5:10 *And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.*

18. We have to flee from sinful circumstances.

2 Cor. 6:17 *Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you,*

The perfect redemption of the power of sin is achieved not before we have put our feet on the 6th step of this spiritual ladder (see there).

6.

The 4th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are they, which do hunger and thirst after righteousness.

Mt. 5:6 *Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.*

Now the redemptive work of the Lord Jesus in the life of the repented soul really has been begun, because now He really began to share this soul His **resurrection life**. This is because in the heart of this soul **hunger and thirst** now begin to exist, according to the promise of the Lord, written in His Word

2 Petr. 1:3-4 *According as His divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*

1 Cor. 2: 9-10 *But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared **for them that love Him**. 10 But God hath revealed [them] unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.*

1. **The Lord Jesus gives birth to His 'resurrection life' within us.** God's Word calls this being 'born again' out of God. This spiritual birth **has to grow up to maturity and perfection**.

This being born again is threefold.

a) The spiritual rebirth out of God's Word.

1 Petr. 1: 23 *Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.*

b) The spiritual rebirth out of water by undergoing the water baptism.

1 Petr. 3: 20b-21 *When once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. 21 The like figure whereunto [even] baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but **the answer of a good conscience toward God**), by the resurrection of Jesus Christ*

The water and the ark of Noah form an anti-type of the water baptism. One has to receive the water baptism with a pure conscience.

Jn. 3: 5 *Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God.*

c) The spiritual rebirth out of (the Spirit of) God (Jn. 3:5).

Jn. 1: 13 *Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.*

2. **From now on we have to put ourselves under the leadership of His Word and Spirit. We have to follow Him obediently on our way of the cross;** the way, which the Lamb of God has prepared for us by His sacrifice at Golgotha.

Rom. 1: 16-17 *For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek (the Gentiles). 17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.*

Rom. 3: 21-22 *But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; 22 Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference*

3. **We have to hunger and thirst after this new Divine life out of God.**

Ps. 107:9 *For he satisfieth the longing soul, and filleth the hungry soul with goodness.*

Ps. 42:1-3 *As the hart² panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after thee, O God. 2 My soul thirsteth for God, for the living God: when shall I come and appear before God? 3 My tears have been my meat day and night, while they continually say unto me, Where [is] thy God?*

This desire is not without promise.

2 Chr. 16:9a *For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew Himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward Him.*

Isa. 44:3 *For I will pour water upon him that is thirsty, and floods upon the dry ground: I will pour My Spirit upon thy seed, and My blessing upon thine offspring*

This desire will be fulfilled, when we accept God's invitation.

Isa. 55:1 *Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price (we have to buy this divine food and drink with our old, sinful life).*

Jn. 4:13-14 *Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: 14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him **a well of water springing up into everlasting life.***

This desire not only will be fulfilled, but He will fill us so abundantly, that His Word, as a result, will spring forth out of our belly as rivers of living water.

Jn. 7:37-38 *In the last day, that great [day] of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto Me, and drink. 38 He that believeth on Me, **as the scripture hath said**, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.*

Rom. 8:18-19 *For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time [are] not worthy [to be compared] with the glory which shall be revealed in us. 19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for **the manifestation of the sons of God.***

Rev. 21:6 *And He said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.*

This is a steady promise. Also for you! You are invited. You can have part of it!

Rev. 22:17 *And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.*

4. We have to pursue for the hunt after the growth of this spiritual life.

1 Tim. 6:11 *But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.*

Php. 3:10-14 *That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death; 11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. 12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. 13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.*

5. This new life only will be granted by our Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

Gal. 4:6 *And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.*

6. Therefore the Father gives us the Spirit of His Son.

Jn. 14:15-17 *If ye love Me, keep My commandments. 16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you **for ever**; 17 [Even] the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, **and shall be in you.***

Jn. 10: 10 *The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have **it more abundantly.***

1 Cor. 1: 30 *But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption*

7. He comes to us through His Holy Spirit. Moreover we have to pray for the baptism in His Spirit!

² In Hebrew: 'ayal, a stag or male deer. It is ranked among the clean animals (see Deut. 12:15, 14:5, 15:22) and was commonly killed for food (see 1 Kings 4:23). The hart is frequently alluded to in the poetical and prophetic books (see Isa. 35:6; Song. 2:8, 9; Lam. 1:6; Ps. 42:1).

Lk. 11: 13 *If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them **that ask Him?***

We have to put Him upon us as a Seal (a token of being a property of Him); upon our heart (our inward man), and upon our arm (our outward man).

Song 8:6a *Set Me as a seal upon thine heart (inner man), as a seal upon thine arm (outward man)*

8. We have to put Him on as a cloth.

Rom. 13:14 *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

9. This new life (this being 'born again' out of God) begins very small, as a fruit, as a spark of life. This new life therefore has to grow towards maturity. This growth see the 5th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Jn. 1:12-13 *But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to **become** the sons of God, [even] to them that believe on His name: 13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.*

Gal. 5:22,23a *But the fruit of the Spirit³ is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23 Meekness, temperance,*

Tit. 3:4-7 *But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, 5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; 6 Which He shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; 7 That being justified by His grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.*

This new life in the righteousness of God has to grow towards perfection, which will not be achieved before standing on the 8th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace. (see there)

7

The 5th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are the merciful.

Mt. 5:7 *Blessed [are] the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.*

Lk. 6:36 *Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.*

1. Mercifulness is a trait of the character of God and of Jesus Christ, which man experiences, if he has listened to God's call for conversion from his sins, and for sharing the death and resurrection of God's Lamb, in order to have victory over the might of sin in his being.

Mt. 9:13 *But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.*

Mt. 12:7 *But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless.*

2 Cor. 1:3 *Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort;*

Eph. 2:4-7 *But God, who is rich in mercy, for His great love wherewith He loved us, 5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 7 That in the ages to come He might shew the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.*

2. Mercifulness is, if God's love has begun to develop in his heart, a trait of the character in the heart of man too. This mercifulness will grow towards maturity, if the convert keeps his body, soul and spirit open for the working of the death and resurrection of God's Lamb. This is the voluntary death of our "old man", our sinful nature, and our resurrection in God's Divine life.

2 Cor. 4:10-11 ***Always** bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body. 11 For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.*

Rom. 12:1-3 *I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. 2 And be not conformed to this*

³ These 9 fruits of the Spirit are always related to the indwelling nature of God in our heart and life. So it is not a human kind of love which ends when the other hurts us, but a divine (unconditional) love. A kind of love which keeps the eternal salvation of the other in mind. Not human joy or peace which may end because of circumstances, but the always present joy, peace, etc. from God in our heart and life.

world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. 3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every (converted) man the measure of faith.

Verse 1 points to our body, verse 2 to our soul, and verse 3 to our spirit.

Gal. 5:24 And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

3. We have to continue to love Jesus too, and not quit this first love.

Lk. 14:26-27 If any man come to Me, and hate not (the sinful life of) his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own (sinful) life also, he cannot be My disciple. 27 And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after Me (on the way of the cross), cannot be My disciple.

Rev. 2:4 Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left **thy first love** (thy love for Me).

4. Further we have to reach out for this divine life in Christ and be hungry and thirsty for it.

Mt. 5:6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled (with divine righteousness).

Phil. 3:10-14 That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death; 11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. 12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. 13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

5. Then the Lord no longer finds any resistance in us to build His Divine Nature to its perfection into us.

2 Petr. 1:3-4 According as His divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be **partakers of the divine nature**, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

1 Jn. 3:2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, **we shall be like Him**; for we shall see Him as He is.

Tit. 3:4-7 But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, 5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; 6 Which He shed on us **abundantly** through Jesus Christ our Saviour; 7 That being justified by His grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

1 Petr. 2:24 Who His own Self bare our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by Whose stripes ye were healed.

The Divine Nature.

1. God is love and is merciful.

Ex. 34:6b-7 The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, 7 Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear [the guilty]; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth [generation.]

Jn. 3:16-17 For God so loved the world, that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved.

1 Jn. 4:7-9; 16-17 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. 8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love. 9 In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. 16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. 17 Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as He is, so are we in this world.

1 Tim. 2:4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

James 5:11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

2. We have to grow in His Nature of love and mercifulness.

Mt. 9:12-13 But when Jesus heard that, He said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. 13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Lk. 6:36-37 Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. 37 Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven

Eph. 4:32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

3. Mercifulness does not condemn.

Mt. 7:1-5 Judge not, that ye be not judged. 2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. 3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? 5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

Jn 3:17 For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved.

James 2:13 For He shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

4. Mercilessness is sin against love for one's neighbour.

1 Jn. 2:9-11 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now. 10 He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him. 11 But he that hateth his brother is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.

1 Jn. 3:14-15 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death. 15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

If we are merciful towards our neighbour, God will be merciful towards us.

Mt. 5:7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

If we are merciless towards our neighbour, God will treat us in a merciless way too.

Mt. 18:23-35 Therefore is the Kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. 25 But for as much as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. 26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. 28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. 29 And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. 31 So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: 33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? 34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. 35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

5. Jesus pours His Divine Nature in us through His Holy Spirit.

Jn. 10:10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

Jn. 15:5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in Me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without Me ye can do nothing.

Rom. 5:5 And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost Which is given unto us.

2 Tim. 1:7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

2 Cor. 3:17-18 17 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. 18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

6. God's Divine Nature grows in us like a fruit.

Gal. 5:22,23a *But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23 Meekness, temperance*

1 Petr. 3:8 *Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous*

If God's Nature grows in us, we spiritually climb on God's mountain, Mount Zion. Its top is formed by God's perfect love, holiness and righteousness. There also is His throne.

Hebr. 12:22-24 *But ye are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, 23 To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, 24 And to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.*

7. **This Nature of love and mercifulness has to grow towards maturity.** (See for this issue step 8)

8.

The 6th step of the ladder of God' blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are the pure in heart

Mt. 5:8 *Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.*

Heaven's door, closed for the sinful, human heart and life, makes that no sinner is able to see and approach heaven. This closed door has to be opened by **the Spirit of sanctification for the sinner**. Not only has he to be reconciled with God (forgiven by Him), but in fact released from his sinful nature too. He has to be **pure in heart**.

Ps. 24:3-6 *Who shall ascend into the hill of the LORD (into heaven)? or who shall stand in His holy place? 4 He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully. 5 He shall receive the blessing from the LORD, and righteousness from the God of his salvation. 6 This [is] **the generation of them that seek Him, that seek Thy face**, O Jacob.*

1. The sinner (the believer too) has to clean up his hands, heart, soul and lips – his outward and inward man –, **completely**, in the blood of God's Lamb; redeemed by the Spirit of sanctification, by the Spirit of burning, from **all** the power of sin. Before this, he is **not** able to enter the most holy place of God. The Scripture advises us to look for this perfection already here on earth.

Isa 4:3-4 *And it shall come to pass, [that he that is] left in Zion, and [he that] remaineth in Jerusalem, shall be called **holy**, [even] every one that is written among the living in Jerusalem: 4 When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof **by the Spirit of judgment, and by the Spirit of burning.***

Mt. 5:48 *Be ye therefore **perfect**, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

Col. 1:27-29 *To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: 28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: 29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.*

This happens when the sinner in his prayer asks for the Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, when he comes to meet the Lord Jesus from face to face and opens himself for Him. Then the Lord is able to share His death and resurrection with him. Then the sinner acts as Jacob, how he wrestles with God, and sought Him in prayer (Gen. 32:24-26). Acting so, the sinner is experiencing, more and more, the death of God's Lamb in whole his heart and life.

1 Petr. 2:24 *Who His own Self bare our sins in His own body on the tree (on the cross), that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.*

2. The sinner, hereby, **has to believe**, that the Spirit of sanctification, the Spirit of the Lord Jesus, will grant him this grace already on earth. He also has **pursue** it.

Php. 3:10-14 *That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death; 11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. 12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. 13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 **I press toward the mark** for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.*

3. **This perfect redemption of the power of sin Jesus had achieved for the whole mankind.** But each believer by opening his heart for Jesus personally has to receive this redemption from Him in his heart and life. By doing so, he in fact will experience in his being the death and resurrection of God's Lamb already here on earth. The reason, why man has to do so, is, because he has an own will. The veil in Israel's tabernacle symbolises our sinful flesh, which Jesus, in order to be able to save us, had to put on as Son of David (Rom. 1:3). He had to do so, to make Himself a Member of the human family to represent this human family before

God. By doing so He had the right to reconcile this human family with God. So He is able to redeem man from his sins, when one personally comes to Him to receive God's grace.

Rom. 1:3 Concerning His Son Jesus Christ our Lord, Which was made of the seed (transl. from the Greek word: 'sperma') of David according to the flesh;

Hebr. 4:14-15 Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast [our] profession. 15 For we have not an High Priest Which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; **but was in all points tempted like as [we are, yet] without sin.**

Hebr. 10:19-20 Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, 20 By a new and living way (the way of the cross), which He hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, His flesh

4. This perfect pureness, this perfect sanctification, is possible already here on earth.

1 Jn. 3:9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in Him: **and he cannot sin**, because he is born of God.

Read also 1 Petr. 2:24, that speaks of **"being dead to sin"**.

5. Without this pureness in heart, we are not able to see God.

1 Tim. 6:11-16 But thou, O man of God, **flee these things**; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. 12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses. 13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and [before] Christ Jesus, Who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; 14 That thou keep [this] commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: 15 Which in His times He shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; 16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom [be] honour and power everlasting. Amen.

Hebr. 12:14 Follow **peace with all men**, and **holiness**, without which no man shall see the Lord

Mt. 5:8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

6. Studying the 3rd step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace, we already saw, that this sanctification doesn't happen automatically, when one believes in the Lord Jesus. We have to co-operate in this matter with the Spirit of sanctification. We have to open our heart and life for Him.

Isa. 4:3-4 And it shall come to pass, [that he that is] left in Zion, and [he that] remaineth in Jerusalem, shall be called holy, [even] every one that is written among the living in Jerusalem: 4 When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof **by the spirit of judgment, and by the spirit of burning.**

1 Cor. 1:30 But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, Who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption

Rev. 3:20 Behold, I stand at the door (of your heart), and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me (sharing spiritually with him My flesh and My blood).

He washes us in His **Blood**, He preaches us His **Word**, and sanctifies us by His **Spirit and Fire**. Blood, Word and Spirit have the selfsame working.

1 Jn. 5:7-8 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. 8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

7. Unfortunately, by the workings of satan, this Word of God, which speaks of perfection by the wise believers, is not believed before the end-time. This happens when the Lord suddenly pours out His latter rain (picture of the Holy Spirit) over all flesh. Then a great Light will come over all men to give total insight in His Word and in their personal conscience. This happens suddenly in the eve of the great world wide revival.

Joel 2:23 Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for He hath given you the former rain moderately, and He will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain (picture of the Spirit) in the first (just as in the beginning, in apostolic times).

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out (the light of) My Spirit **upon all flesh**; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions

Mal. 3:1-3 Behold, I will send My messenger (a called and anointed servant of the Lord), and he shall prepare the way before Me: and the Lord, Whom ye seek, shall **suddenly** come to His temple (picture of all wise children of God), even the Messenger of the (blood)covenant, Whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. 2 But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's (picture of the Spirit) fire, and like fullers' (picture of the Spirit) soap: 3 And

He shall sit [as] a refiner and purifier of silver: and He shall purify the sons of Levi (picture of all called and wise servants of the Lord), and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.

Acts 2:17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out (the light) of My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams

The first perfectly cleansed soul will in this world come to manifestation not before the end-time, namely in the time, when the 10 kings (political leaders) of Europe come to manifestation. In Daniel 2:34-35 and 44-45 this first perfectly cleansed soul is pictured as a stone, which without (human) hands is hewn off from the mountain (of sin), and so liberated will roll down. This single stone then will be multiplied up to a big mountain of liberated stones (picture of the Bride of God's Lamb), which will fill the whole world.

Dan. 2:34-35 Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces. 35 Then (in the heart of that perfectly cleansed soul) was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing-floors; and the wind (picture of God's Spirit) carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain (picture of the Bride of God's Lamb), and filled the whole earth.

Dan. 2:44-45 And in the days of these kings (the 10 last political leaders of Europe) shall the God of heaven set up a Kingdom (God's Kingdom on earth), which shall never be destroyed: and the (Divine) Kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. 45 Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold (the people of this Divine Kingdom, Israel, shall only acknowledge the Lord God as their sovereign King); the great God hath made known to the king what shall only come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

Read the 10th salvation bringing grace in chapter 12.

This perfect pureness is necessary.

1. For the formation of the Bride of God's Lamb.

*Eph. 5:26-27 That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 That He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, **not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.***

Rev. 12:11 And they overcame him (satan) by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their (sinful) lives unto the death (being mortified by the purging fire of the Spirit).

2. For being a holy sanctuary, in which the Father, through His Spirit, is able to live and labour in all His glory.

*Eph. 3:19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled **with all the fulness of God.***

*2 Cor. 6:16-18 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell **in** them, and walk **in** them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. 17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*

3. So that the Holy Spirit is able to labour through the Bride in all His power.

Rev. 6:2 And I saw, and behold a white horse (picture of the righteous power of the Spirit): and he (all called and anointed servants, warriors of the Lord) that sat on him had a bow (picture of God's everlasting Word); and a (victor's) crown (i.e. crown for the victor) was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

4. For bringing the Church to victory over the power of sin, and to the world wide revival in the end-time, and to the harvest of countless souls.

*Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out (the light of) My Spirit **upon all flesh**; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions*

Mal. 3:1-3 Already quoted above

All flesh, all men, then will be drenched **in the light** of the Holy Spirit in order that all men will come to complete insight in God's Word and in the state of sin in their heart and life, which will bring forth the world wide revival.

*Rev. 7:9 After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, **which no man could number**, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands*

9.

The 7th step of the ladder of blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are the peacemakers.

Mt. 5:9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

Isa. 52:7 How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth!

Nah. 1:15 Behold upon the mountains the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace! O Judah, keep thy solemn feasts, perform thy vows: for the wicked shall no more pass through thee; he is utterly cut off.

1. **Peacemakers are they, who, as living instruments of the Holy Spirit, bring the Gospel conform their Divine calling and anointing to their fellow men.** Doing so, sinful men will be redeemed from sin and made pure and holy, **by the labor of the peacemakers, who have brought them in peace with and before God almighty**, already here on earth. They are in their lives and sermons **witnesses** of God's blessing bringing grace and power. They, themselves are brought in this holy position by God's grace sharing them the death and resurrection of God's Lamb, after they had opened their hearts and lives for Him.

There are 5 types of peacemakers.

Ef. 4:11-13 And He gave some, **apostles**; and some, **prophets**; and some, **evangelists**; and some, **pastors** and **teachers**; 12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ (the true part of the Church): 13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, **unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ**

- **Apostles**, they, who as missionaries founded Churches in regions, in which were not yet labored in. After they have founded a Church, they carry the new Church over to a spiritual servant, which the Lord has called and anointed as pastor to that local church. The apostle then begins anew in another region.
- **Prophets**, they, who receive God's Word directly from Him and pass that Word through to the souls of the Church they labour in or visit.
- **Evangelists**, travelling preachers, who, if they have won new souls, handle them over to a spiritual pastor of a local Church.
- **Pastors**, they who care and feed a local Church.
- **Teachers**, they who teach God's Word thoroughly when they serve or visit a local Church.

These are 5 sorts of called and anointed servants of the Lord. Who precede the Church, 5 kinds of spiritual leaders, who conform their special anointing:

- Lead the souls in their formation and perfection,
- Train them in their personal service and labor,
- Build the Body of Christ, the Church out of the world.

2. **An adequate witness gives satisfaction to the following:**

Mk. 16:17-20 And these signs shall follow **them that believe**; In My Name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; 18 They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. 19 So then after the Lord Had spoken unto them, He was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. 20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with [them], and confirming the word with signs following.

3. **Jesus shares His personal, Divine anointing with His spiritual servants according to their personal calling.**

The personal anointing of Jesus Himself.

Isa. 61:1-3 The Spirit of the Lord GOD [is] upon Me; because the LORD hath anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He hath sent Me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison (of sin) to them that are bound; 2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; 3 To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified.

His servants whom He has shared His personal anointing.

Jn. 17:18 As Thou hast sent Me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

Jn. 20:21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace [be] unto you: as [My] Father hath sent Me, even so send I you.

Isa. 61:4-6 *And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations. 5 And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your plowmen and your vinedressers. 6 But ye shall be named the priests of the LORD: men shall call you the ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves.*

4. Their calling and preparing for their spiritual service is a question of Divine predestination.

Gal. 1:15-16 *But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, 16 To reveal His Son in me, that I might preach Him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood*

5. Their anointing has 5 phases.

a) God calls them personally for their spiritual labor.

Mark. 3:13 *And He goeth up into a mountain, and calleth [unto Him] whom He would: and they came unto Him.*

b) If they agree with His calling, He affirms their calling, and prepares their labor for them.

Eph. 2:10 *For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.*

c) He gives them the necessary gifts, knowledge and wisdom. So they are able to do their spiritual work.

Lk. 24:45-49 *Then opened He their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, 46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: 47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His Name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. 48 And ye are witnesses of these things. 49 And, behold, I send the promise of My Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, **until ye be endued with power from on high.***

1 Cor. 12:4-11 *Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. 6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. 7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. 8 For to one is given by the Spirit **the word of wisdom**; to another **the word of knowledge** by the same Spirit; 9 To another **faith** by the same Spirit; to another **the gifts of healing** by the same Spirit; 10 To another **the working of miracles**; to another **prophecy**; to another **discerning of spirits**; to another **[divers] kinds of tongues**; to another the **interpretation of tongues**: 11 But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.*

d) He girds them on with power and might in and through the Holy Spirit, their anointing for their spiritual labour (their baptism in the Holy Spirit).

Mark. 3:14-15 *And He ordained twelve, that they should be with Him, and that He might send them forth to preach, 15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils*

Lk. 10:19 *Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and **over all the power of the enemy**: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.*

e) He sends them out to the region of their labor, and opens for them doors, which before were closed.

Mark. 3:14 *And He ordained twelve, that they should be with Him, and that He might send them forth to preach*

Rev. 3:8 *I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept My Word, and hast not denied My Name.*

Isa. 61:4 *And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations.*

6. Jesus Christ is the Head of these peacemakers, and the Head of the Church, which they have founded.

So, He is also the Head of the spiritual harvest and of all spiritual labour. He is the Head of the spiritual Body, which His servants in the whole world have won. They are but living, spiritual instruments in the almighty hand of Jesus Christ. They are but spiritual **service hatches** of God's salvation bringing grace!

Lk. 17:10 *So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.*

Mt. 16:18 *And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock (this faith of you in Me) I will build My Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.*

Peter and all other servants of the Lord have to build the Church through their faith in Him and in His Word, firm as a rock, and by the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Cor. 3:9-10 *For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, [ye are] God's building. 10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.*

Ps. 127:1-2 *Except the LORD build the house, they labour in vain that build it: except the LORD keep the city, the watchman waketh [but] in vain. 2 [It is] vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late, to eat the bread of sorrows: [for] so He giveth His beloved sleep.*

- 7. This Body of Christ, which they have to build in and through the power of the Holy Spirit, has to grow till whole the world has been evangelised, and so the Church by the grace of God has been founded.**

Mt. 24:14 *And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*

- 8. Jesus is gone to heaven, and labours, in the time being, as God's High Priest in and through His Holy Spirit on earth, namely through His called and anointed servants.**

Hebr. 9:11-15 *But Christ being come an High Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; 12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood He entered in once into the holy place, having obtained **eternal redemption** [for us]. 13 For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: 14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, Who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? 15 And for this cause He is the Mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions [that were] under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.*

2 Cor. 3:17 *Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty (freedom of sin).*

Mt. 3:11-12 *I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and [with] fire: 12 Whose fan [is] in his hand, and He will throughly purge His floor, and gather His wheat into the garner; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.*

Jn. 14:15-17 *If ye love Me, keep My commandments. 16 And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you **for ever**; 17 [Even] the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, **and shall be in you.***

Acts 1:8 *But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*

Acts 2:17-18 *And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will **pour out** (the light of) My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: 18 And on My servants and on My handmaidens I will pour out in those days of My Spirit; and they shall prophesy*

- 9. This Spirit will dwell in God's servants and strengthen them to the sanctification and salvation of other believers.**

Eph. 3:16 *That He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might by His Spirit **in the inner man***

- 10. We, as God's servants, have to pray for this indwelling Divine Power. This baptism in the Holy Spirit doesn't happen automatically.**

Lk. 11:13 *If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit **to them that ask Him?***

- 11. This Spirit of God strengthens and leads God's servants to the honour and glory of God and Jesus Christ only, and for the salvation of the world. They render God's salvation bringing Gospel to the sinner.**

Isa. 42:8 *I [am] the LORD (literally: YaHWeH): that [is] My Name: and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images.*

Isa. 48:11 *For Mine own sake, [even] for Mine own sake, will I do [it]: for how should [My name] be polluted? and I will not give My glory unto another.*

Rev 7:11-12 *And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts (literally: living creatures), and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, 12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, [be] unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.*

Rom. 10:14-15 *How then shall they call on Him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in Him of Whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? 15 And how shall they preach, **except they be sent?** as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!*

12. He girds and clothes His peacemakers inwardly and outwardly with the whole armour of God, and they, themselves, in faith do so likewise. Doing so they become filled with His righteousness and power, ready for the war against satan and his power.

Eph. 6:10-18 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might. 11 Put on the **whole** armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but **against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high [places]**. 13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. 14 Stand therefore, having your loins (of your mind: see 1 Petr. 1:13) girt about with (the Word of) truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness (the inward armour); 15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God (together with the above mentioned the outward armour): 18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication **for all saints**;

2 Cor. 10:3-6 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: 4 (For the weapons of our warfare [are] not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) 5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; 6 And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, **when your obedience is fulfilled**.

He brings in His servant the fruit of God's righteousness to maturity.

Gal. 5:22,23a But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23 Meekness, temperance

His divine power and might has to grow up to their perfection.

Mt. 25:14-17 For [the kingdom of heaven is] as a man travelling into a far country, [who] called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. 16 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made [them] other five talents. 17 And likewise he that [had received] two, he also gained other two.

This inward dwelling and increasing divine power and might is here pictured by "talents".

13. His servants themselves are only living instruments in His almighty, laboring hand, and therefore they have to **wait patiently** till **He** comes in action.

Ps. 37:5 Commit thy way unto the LORD; trust also in Him; and He shall bring [it] to pass.

Ps. 37:34 Wait on the LORD, and keep His way, and He shall exalt thee to inherit the land: when the wicked are cut off, thou shalt see [it].

Eph. 2:10 For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

14. In the end-time His anointing will be great and wonderful. For this subject read the 10th salvation bringing grace in chapter 12.

10.

The 8th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed are they, which are persecuted for righteousness' sake.

Mt. 5:10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

1. Righteousness is as love a Divine trait of God's character, which by grace also develops in a soul, who searches for righteousness as a Divine fruit of the new man in Christ, by gracefully building of God's Being in him.

Eze. 18:9 Hath walked in my statutes, and hath kept my judgments, to deal truly; he is just, he shall surely live, saith the Lord GOD.

On this step the Divine righteousness comes to maturity in the righteousness searching souls and the divine promise, given in 2 Cor. 5:21, is then coming to manifestation.

2 Cor. 5:21 For He (the Father) hath made Him (the Son)[to be] sin for us, Who knew no sin; that we might be made **the righteousness of God** in Him.

Again: righteousness is a trait of God's character.

Ps. 11:7 For the righteous LORD loveth righteousness; His countenance doth behold the upright.

When the Son of God revealed Himself as Man on earth in the time of Abraham, He called Himself Melchizedek, which means King of righteousness. Jesus **is** the King of righteousness.

Hebr. 7:1-2 For this Melchisedec, King of Salem, Priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him; 2 To Whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace

The Holy Spirit is the Teacher, Who teaches us righteousness, and leads us up to God's righteousness.

Joel 2:23 Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for He hath given you the former rain moderately, and He will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain (picture of the outpoured Spirit) in the first (as in the beginning, the apostolic times).

Ps. 23:3 He restoreth my soul: He leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for His Name's sake.

2. God's eternal plan with man is leading him up to His own righteousness, His Divine Nature, performing him up to His selfsame Image, so that man who is made perfect may reveal God's Being, just as the eternal Son does so. This eternal plan of God became not disturbed by human sin.

Gen. 1:26a And God said, Let Us make man in Our Image, after Our Likeness (revealing all the glory of God , 1 John 3:2, Rev. 20:11)

Ps. 37:6 And He shall bring forth thy righteousness as the light, and thy judgment as the noonday.

Isa. 61:10-11 I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for He hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, He hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh [himself] with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth [herself] with her jewels. 11 For as the earth bringeth forth her bud, and as the garden causeth the things that are sown in it to spring forth; so the Lord GOD will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations.

Mal. 4:2 But unto you that fear My Name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in His wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.

Rom. 8:29-30 For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate [to be] conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the Firstborn among many brethren. 30 Moreover whom He did predestinate, them He also called: and whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified.

2 Cor. 3:17-18 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord [is], there [is] liberty (of sin). 18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same limage from glory to glory, [even] as by the Spirit of the Lord.

Eph. 1:3-6 Blessed [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: 4 According as He hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love: 5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, 6 To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He hath made us accepted in the Beloved.

*Eph. 3:17-19 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what [is] the breadth, and length, and depth, and height (all the dimensions of God's love); 19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with **all the fulness of God**.*

*Eph. 4:11-13 And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12 For **the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ**: 13 Till we all come **in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ***

*Eph. 4:23-24 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24 And that ye put on the new man, which **after God** is created in righteousness and true holiness.*

Col. 1:12-13 Giving thanks unto the Father, Which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: 13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the Kingdom of his dear Son

*2 Petr. 1:3-4 According as His divine power hath given unto us all things that [pertain] unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be **partakers of the divine nature**, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*

*1 Jn. 3:1-3 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not. 2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, **we shall be like Him**; for we shall see Him as He is. 3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.*

Rev. 21:3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God [is] with men, and He will dwell with (in – see 2 Cor. 6:16) them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with (in) them, [and be] their God.

Rev. 21:6-7 And He said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life (picture of the Holy Spirit) freely. 7 He that overcometh shall inherit **all things**; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son.

3. This growth in Divine righteousness does not happen automatically.

a) We have to pursue it.

Eph. 6:14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness

It is the loins of our mind, which we have to gird on with the truth of His Word.

Php. 3:10-14 That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death; 11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. 12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. 13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but [this] one thing [I do], forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 **I press toward the mark for the prize** of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

b) Just as God we have to love divine righteousness.

Ps. 45:6-7 Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of Thy kingdom [is] a right sceptre. 7 Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God (the Son), thy God (the Father), hath anointed Thee with the Oil of gladness (picture of God's Spirit) above Thy fellows.

Then He will rain His righteousness in us.

Hos. 10:12 Sow to yourselves in righteousness, reap in mercy; break up your fallow ground: for it is time to seek the LORD, till He come and rain righteousness upon you.

4. This righteousness Jesus will build in us.

1 Cor. 1:30 But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us **wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption**

2 Cor. 5:21 For He (the Father) hath made Him (the Son) to be sin for us, Who knew no sin; that we might be made the **righteousness of God** in Him.

5. This righteousness grows in us like a fruit. She is like God's love implied in our being born again out of God.

Gal. 5:22,23a But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23 Meekness, temperance

Hebr. 12:11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

6. This righteousness is, as we remain in Christ, eternal.

Dan. 9:24 Seventy weeks (being years) are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in **everlasting righteousness**, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.

7. By this sharing of His righteousness, we, together with Jesus Christ as the Head, form the eternal sanctuary of our almighty God.

Col. 2:9 For in Him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

Eph. 2:19-22 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner Stone; 21 In Whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: 22 In Whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

Eph. 3:19b that ye might be filled with **all the fulness of God**.

2 Cor. 6:16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell **in** them, and walk **in** [them]; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.

Rev. 21:3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God [is] with men, and he will dwell with (in) them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with (in) them, [and be] their God.

By the Bible verse 2 Cor. 6:16, mentioned here above, we learn, that God want to **inhabit** His people. Read also Eph. 2:19-22 mentioned here above.

8. They, who are grown in this Divine righteousness up to maturity are hated by satan and by the unconverted world, and are persecuted by them.

Mt. 5:10 Blessed [are] they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the Kingdom of heaven.

Lk. 6:22-23 Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you [from their company], and shall reproach [you], and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. 23 Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward [is] great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

Lk. 6: 26 Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

Jn. 15:18-25 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated Me before [it hated] you. 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord. If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept My saying, they will keep yours also. 21 But all these things will they do unto you for My Name's sake, because they know not Him that sent Me. 22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin. 23 He that hateth Me hateth My Father also. 24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both Me and My Father. 25 But [this cometh to pass], that the Word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated Me without a cause.

*Jn. 16:33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; **I have overcome** the world.*

1 Petr. 4:12-16 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: 13 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when His glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy. 14 If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy are ye; for the Spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part He is evil spoken of, but on your part He is glorified. 15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters. 16 Yet if [any man suffer] as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf.

1 Jn. 3:13 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

9. Nevertheless, God gives us the divine power to destroy the satanic power of the opponents.

Isa. 54:17 No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every (inspiring, devilish) tongue [that] shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This [is] the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness [is] of Me, saith the LORD.

The **power of satan** regarding the tongue of evil men with which he brings hatred, violence and persecution we have to **condemn**, in order that evil men, as satan's instrument don't come to execution of their evil plans.

James 4:7 Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

We only have the power to resist the powers of satan, if we are in pureness with God.

1 Jn. 4:4-6 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world. 5 They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. 6 We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

Rom. 8:31-33 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us? 32 He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things? 33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.

10. The growth of the Divine Nature, up to maturity, given by the salvation bringing grace of God, remains in a hidden state of the inner man, and comes to revelation in the flesh, not before the end-time; namely, in the life of the Bride of God's Lamb. The reason of this is, that the Lord then already has girded her with great power and might. The Word of God speaks then of **the revelation of the sons of God**. Read for this the 10th salvation bringing grace of God in chapter 12.

*Isa. 60:2-3 For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and His glory **shall be seen upon thee**. 3 And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.*

11.

The 9th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.

Blessed they, when men shall revile them, and persecute them, and shall say all manner of evil against them, for the Lord's sake.

Mt.5:11-12 Blessed are ye, when [men] shall revile you, and persecute [you], and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for My sake. 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

These Christians are the true Body of Christ on earth. They live very closely to their Head, the Lord Jesus Christ, and bear His Name.

Rev. 3:12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, [which is] new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from My God: and [I will write upon him] My new name.

They have the Name of their God (YaHWeH) and the new Name of the Lord, written on their foreheads and in their being. Satan hates this Name and hates therefore them too. He reviles and persecutes them by means of evil men, and by worldly-minded Christians.

When you endorse a photo with your name, you acknowledge, that that photo has exactly your countenance. If God writes on us His Name and the new Name of His Son, this is exactly the same. These Christians live on the 9th step of the Ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace, and have the likeness of God and His Christ. They form, just as Jesus the revelation of the almighty God.

1 Jn. 3:2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is.

Gen. 1:26a And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness

They have the same likeness as Jesus by their perfect communication (inward and outward) with the Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ. **They are totally drenched in His Spirit!**

1 Cor. 12:13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

They swim in truth in the Spirit of God.

Eze. 47:5 Afterward he measured a thousand; [and it was] a river that I could not pass over: for the waters were risen, waters to swim in, a river that could not be passed over.

Spiritually they then have the position of the 4 living creatures (the King James version speaks of "beasts"; literally translated it says "living creatures"), which are round and above the throne of God. They are full of eyes, before and behind (picture of God's Spirit).

Rev. 4:6 And before the throne [there was] a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, [were] four beasts (living creatures) full of eyes before and behind (they are drowned in the Spirit of God).

Rev. 6:6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts (living creatures) say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine (picture of the true children of God).

On earth their spiritual glory, their godliness, is **not distinguished** and **put hidden**, for their own protection against the powers of evil in this world.

1 Cor. 2:14-15 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know [them], because they are spiritually discerned. 15 But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.

But in the end-time this previously hidden godliness is **revealed in the flesh**. It is then seen by anyone, because they, who have this godliness then already, have God's authority (crown), God's almighty power!

*Rom. 8:19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for **the manifestation of the sons of God**.*

*1 Tim. 3:16 And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was **manifest in the flesh**, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.*

Isa. 60:2-3 For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee. 3 And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.

Rev. 12:1 And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars

The Bible verse 1 Tim. 3:16 is by many wrongly taught, and ascribed to Jesus. This is **not true!** Jesus was not justified in the Spirit, He **was just**. This godliness pictures the completely sanctified Church. This part of the Scripture also forms, in its context, the description, of how the Church, in its perfect status, should be. This part of the Scripture forms a breach-block, which the show-world calls an “apotheoses”, a splendid closing scene. It is the revelation in the flesh of what before was hidden.

Hag. 2:9a *And the glory of this latter house (the Church of the end-time) shall be greater than the former (the Church out of the apostolic age).*

In my opinion this last step is achieved, not before the end-time. So now we can continue to the last step, the 12th chapter, dealing about the 10th blessing (salvation) bringing grace of God.

12.

The 10th and last blessing (salvation) bringing grace of God, meant for the end-time.

Blessed are they, which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb.

Rev. 19: 9 *And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*

1. God's end-time creation: the Bride of the Lamb of God – the New Jerusalem – who is created “in the last days” here on earth.

God wants to establish in the end-time a special, wonderful, divine creation **on earth, which never before** was brought about: the Bride of the Lamb of God, the initial establishment of the New Jerusalem.

Rev. 21:9-10 *And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. 10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God*

This is God's end-time creation of men, who truly bear the image of God, which was His intention, when He wanted to create men after His likeness

Gen. 1:26a *And God said, Let us make man **in our image, after our likeness***

To accomplish this end-time creation God's people first have to come to faith in His Word, which not only will bring salvation to sinners, but **also perfection**, already on earth. He wants to clean the believing, totally surrendered sinner, in such a perfect way, that He is able to render him His Divine Nature of mature righteousness and love. Such a man He is able to create up to a perfect image of Himself, already on earth. Such a faith is only possible in the end-time, after **God's everlasting Gospel is preached, and the light of the Holy Spirit has been poured out on all flesh**.

Rev. 14:6 *And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having **the everlasting Gospel** to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and **to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people***

Acts 2:17 *And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams*

To achieve this end-time creation, He calls the wise believers to the marriage supper of the Lamb (Rev. 19:9). With all who comply with this call of God's Spirit – the wise ones do so – He shares **in a perfect way** His death and resurrection by their eating and drinking spiritually of His flesh and His Blood. Then the Lord God is able to recreate such a believer into a member of the Bride of the Lamb, into perfect “stones”, to build with them the initial establishment of the New Jerusalem.

This New Jerusalem doesn't yet exist in the old heaven. It has to be created in the end-time – stone after stone – here on earth. These stones have to be perfect and purified in the Blood of the Lamb, and in the Fire of God's Word and Spirit.

What the apostle John saw on Patmos (Rev. 21) **is the profetic counterpart** of the new Jerusalem in her perfect state, that now still is kept in heaven (1 Petr. 1:4), to be created in the end-time.

The **first “stone”**, with which the new Jerusalem will be build, will be created in the time of the “10 kings” (political leaders) of Europe.

Dan. 2:34-35 *Thou sawest till that a stone was cut **out without hands** (without human help), which smote (in his heart) the image upon his feet [that were] of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces (all forms of human kingdoms, administrations). 35 Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind (picture of the Holy Spirit) carried them away, that no place was found (in the heart of this perfect Christian; he acknowledge only*

the Kingship of King Jesus) for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth (picture of the Bride of God's Lamb).

Dan. 2:44-45 And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a Kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the Kingdom (of God) shall not be left to other people, (but to the people of Israel), [but] it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms (these sorts of human kingdoms or administrations), and it shall stand for ever. 45 Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain (of sin) without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream [is] certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

Some believers think wrongly, that this "stone" is the Lord Jesus Christ. This is impossible, because this is a happening of the end-time, of the time of the 10 kings of Europe. Moreover, our Lord was never bound on this mountain of sin as this stone before was. Our Lord was, living on earth, always perfectly free of any sin.

When this stone, as a first is freed without (human) hands from this mountain of sin, rapidly the mountain of pure stones (**the Bride of the Lamb**) will be formed.

2. The preparation of the Bride of the Lamb (the New Jerusalem), which in the end-time has to be build on earth.

a) **The call of the Spirit resounds then in the hearts of the believers of the end-time, to partake in the total death on earth from all powers of sin, a redemption achieved by the Lamb of God at Golgotha.** This sharing in the perfect death of God's Lamb is **necessary** to be formed up to a member of the Bride of God's Lamb on earth, in order that this member can be **without spot or wrinkle**.

*Rev. 19:9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the **marriage supper of the Lamb**. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*

Eph. 5:26-27 That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word, 27 that He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

I have already mentioned, that this perfect death from all might of sin will be accepted and believed, not before the end-time. The half of the true believers will do so; namely the **wise part of them**.

Mt. 25:1-4 Then shall the Kingdom of heaven (on earth, the Church) be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the Bridegroom (this is thus an end-time happening). 2 And five of them were wise, and five [were] foolish. 3 They that [were] foolish took their lamps (picture of their witness-life), and took no oil (picture of the Holy Spirit) with them: 4 But the wise took oil in their vessels (picture of their hearts, which above all have to be sanctified by the Spirit) with their lamps.

The foolish part of the true Church – the halve of it, 5 of the 10 virgins – rejects this and is content with forgiveness of their committed sins, by the washing in the Blood of the Lamb of God, and doesn't surrender themselves to **the Spirit of sanctification**, here pictured by the **Oil in their vessels** (picture of their hearts). They also are named "virgins", because they also wash their sins in the Blood of the Lamb of God. They only have their eyes fixed on the witness-power of the inward working Holy Spirit to bring other souls to conversion.

We see these foolish ones also pictured in Lk. 14:16-24.

*Lk. 14:16-24 Then said He unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many: 17 And sent his servant (picture of all called and anointed servants of the Lord) at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready. 18 And they all with one [consent] began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground (picture of money and wealth), and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused. 19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen (picture of the five senses and lusts, which pull him like oxen-power away from the love of Christ), and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. 20 And another said, I have married a wife (he who gives priority to human will above this lovely offer of Christ), and therefore I cannot come. 21 So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind (believers who are spiritually in such a circumstance) 22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room. 23 And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel [them] to come in (believers who are just converted), that my house may be filled. 24 For I say unto you, **that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper (all of them shall be rejected and not become members of the Bride of God's Lamb).***

A part of these foolish ones apologises, because they prefer material possessions above spiritual perfection and the acceptance of God's offer to share the marriage supper of God's Lamb (verse 18). An other part prefer the enjoying of the 5 senses of the flesh, which pull them like ox-power away from this Divine mercy (verse 19). Again another part of the foolish ones denies God's call, because they prefer to listen to the will and words of their wife, or for instance of their pastor, who has an other vision on God's Word (verse 20). None of these foolish ones is ever accepted as future member of the Bride of the Lamb on earth (verse 24). Others (verses 21-23) will take their stead to make full the number of the Bride of God's Lamb on earth.

b) The preparation of those, who listen to the call of the Spirit of God to share the marriage supper of God's Lamb.

b1) They will be personally accepted as future members of the Bride of God's Lamb.

Mt. 24:40-41 Then shall two⁴ be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. 41 Two [women shall be]⁵ grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

Lk. 17:34-37 I tell you, in that night there shall be two [men]⁶ (= persons) in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. 35 Two [women]⁷ shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left. 36 Two [men]⁸ shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. 37 And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And He said unto them, Wheresoever the body (of the Bride's children) [is], thither will the eagles (picture of the Bride's children) be gathered together.

This acceptance as future members of the Bride of God's Lamb is **personal**. After their acceptance the Holy Spirit of God adds them to the spiritual Body of the Bride of God's Lamb, which He has to create.

b2) The sudden, total redemption of the old sinful life by the purgative Fire of the Spirit of God.

Isa. 4:3-4 And it shall come to pass, [that he that is] left in Zion, and [he that] remaineth in Jerusalem, shall be called holy, [even] every one that is written among the living in Jerusalem: 4 When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof **by the Spirit of judgment, and by the Spirit of burning.**

Mal. 3:1-3 Behold, I will send my messenger (picture of all called and anointed servants of the Lord), and he shall prepare the way before Me: and the Lord (invisible in and through the Holy Spirit), Whom ye seek, shall **suddenly** come to His temple, even the Messenger of the (Blood)covenant, Whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. 2 But who may abide the day of His coming? and who shall stand when He appeareth? for He is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' (picture of Him Who purges the linen clothe) soap: 3 And He shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and He shall purify the sons of Levi (picture of all wise servants of the Lord), and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.

Mt. 3:11-12 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and [with] Fire: 12 Whose fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor (picture of the human heart), and gather His wheat into the garner; but He will burn up the chaff (picture of the sinful old man) with unquenchable fire.

b3) The justification of the Bride of God's Lamb. The still increasing divine Nature.

Isa. 61:10 I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for He hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, He hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh [himself] with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth [herself] with her jewels.

1 Petr. 1:3-5 Blessed [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Which according to His abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, **reserved in heaven for you,** 5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation **ready to be revealed in the last time.**

2 Petr. 1:3-4 According as His Divine power hath given unto us all things that [pertain] unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be **partakers of the divine nature,** having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

1 John 3:2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, **we shall be like Him;** for we shall see Him as He is.

Rev. 19:8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

c) The outpouring of the Latter Rain (of abundant divine Life). The end-time baptism in the Holy Spirit.

Joel 2:23 Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for He hath given you the former rain moderately, and He will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain (picture of the outpoured Spirit of God) in the first (outpoured as in the first, which is the apostolic time)

Jn. 10:10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have [it] **more abundantly.**

⁴ In the original texts it does not speak of man or woman. It reads: *there shall be two*, of which one shall be taken and the other left (behind in their un-blessed position).

⁵ See note 4.

⁶ See note 4.

⁷ See note 4.

⁸ See note 4.

d) The glorifying of the Bride of God's Lamb.

Rev. 12:1 *And there appeared a great wonder in heaven (the Kingdom of heaven on earth, which is the Church) a woman (the Bride of God's Lamb) clothed with the sun (picture of the Father), and the moon (picture of the Son) under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars (picture of the Holy Spirit):*

The Bride of God's Lamb is then clothed with the glory of the Father (the sun), that of the Lamb (the moon), and crowned with the authority and power of the Holy Spirit (the 12 stars).

Mt. 13:43 *Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

Rev. 22:14 *Blessed [are] they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life (picture of Jesus), and may enter in through the gates into the city.*

Ps. 45:10-15 *Hearken, O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house (thy sinful human life); 11 So shall the king greatly desire thy beauty: for He is thy Lord; and worship thou Him. 12 And the daughter of Tyre [shall be there] with a gift; [even] the rich among the people shall intreat thy favour. 13 The king's daughter (the Bride of the Lamb) [is] all glorious within (her inward glory): her clothing is of wrought gold (her outward glory). 14 She shall be brought unto the King in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions (the part of the Bride which is not yet come up to the total sanctification, the remnant of her seed, Rev. 12:17) that follow her shall be brought unto thee. 15 With gladness and rejoicing shall they be brought: they shall enter into the King's palace.*

Rev. 22:11 *He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.*

She is **inwardly** and **outwardly** glorified. She is glorified with the glory of God Himself.

e) The preceding glorifying of the Bride happens together with the sudden, invisible return of the Bride-groom in and through the Holy Spirit.

3. The wedding festival of the Lamb of God. The spiritual unity of the Bride and God's Lamb, of the Body of Christ (the Bride-Church with its spiritual Head).

Rev. 19:6-8 *And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. 7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife (the Bride of God's Lamb) hath made herself ready. 8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.*

After the wedding festival or unification of the Bride with God's Lamb, in and through the Holy Spirit, she sits with Him and with the Father **in the throne of heaven**.

Rev. 3:21 *To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne.*

4. Now the time of labour is there, for which the wedding (unification) on earth has to be achieved.

Lk. 12:35-37 *Let your loins be girded about, and [your] lights burning; 36 And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when He will return from the wedding; that when He cometh and knocketh, they may open unto Him immediately. 37 Blessed [are] those servants, whom the Lord when He cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that He shall gird Himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them (sharing with them His anointing and His end-time labor).*

Eph. 6:14 *Stand therefore, having your loins (the loins of your mind, 1 Petr. 1:13) girt about with (the Word of) truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness (the inward armour of God).*

1 Petr. 1:13 *Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ;*

Here is referred to the **"loins of your mind"**, which have to be girded up with the wisdom of God's Word (the Word of truth), so that we are able to serve the Bridegroom.

This spiritual labour contains:

a) **The warfare against sins in the Church and the leading of her to total victory over her sins in the full power of the Holy Spirit. Moreover the leading of her in all the knowledge of God's everlasting Gospel.**

Rev. 12:7 *And there was war in heaven (in the Kingdom of heaven on earth, which is the Church): Michael (our Lord Jesus as Lord of hosts) and His angels (His called and anointed servants and warriors) fought against the dragon (satan); and the dragon fought and his angels (the workers of darkness),*

This war in the 7 Churches contains:

a1) The destruction of the 7-headed dragon, which does its destructive work in the Church.

Rev. 12:3-4 *And there appeared another wonder in heaven (the Kingdom of heaven on earth, which is the Church); and behold a great red (sin)dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. 4 And his tail (picture of the false prophets, Isa. 9:14) drew the third part of the stars of heaven (the apostate Christians, 2 Th. 2:3), and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.*

Rev. 12:8-11 *And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven (in the Kingdom of heaven, the true part of the Church). 9 And the great (sin)dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil, and satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth (out of the true Church), and his angels were cast out with him. 10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven (in the true part of the Church), Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their (sinful) lives unto the death (until it is mortified by the purifying fire of the Spirit).*

a2) The cleansing of the 7 Churches, and the leading of them to full victory over sin.

Read Rev. chapters 2 and 3

Rev. 6:1-2 *And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts (literally transl.: living creatures) saying, Come and see. 2 And I saw, and behold a white horse (picture of the power of righteousness of the Holy Spirit): and he (picture of all called and anointed servants of the Lord) that sat on him had a bow (picture of the Word of God); and a (victor's) crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer (till the victory is complete).*

a3) The preaching of the perfect, everlasting Gospel.

Rev. 14:6 *And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and **to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,***

Hab. 2:14 *For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.*

b) The performing of the great worldwide revival.

Joel 2:28-29 *And it shall come to pass afterward, [that] I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: 29 And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit.*

Rev. 14:14-16 *And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. 15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. 16 And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and **the earth was reaped.***

This matter is extensively dealt with in the Bible study: "There is soon a divine Bridal festival here on earth".

5. Israel's role in the great worldwide revival.

In the spiritual Body of the Bride is a large and special place fallen to Israel's lot. This is God's promise to Abram, which is here come to expectation. His promise by Scripture is 5 times repeated; namely, that Abram's offspring would be a blessing **for all nations**.

Gen. 22:18 *And in thy seed shall **all the nations of the earth be blessed**; because thou hast obeyed My voice.*

In the end-time the 10, in human eyes "lost tribes" of the House of Israel will regain their lost identity. Then together with the Jews (the tribes Judah, Benjamin and Levy) they will return to Canaan, when this territory has been liberated from the nations, which have taken it in possession, after the exile of the Jews by the Romans. Then the whole of Israel will take Canaan in possession again. This liberation of whole Canaan happens during the war of Gog and Magog (Eze. 38, 39).

When this war is over, this land – from the beech of Egypt up to the Euphrates – which God had promised to Abram, will be given to **the whole** of Israel (all 12 tribes). Then, a great exodus, out of the whole world, towards Canaan will happen.

Eze. 39:25-29 *Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; **Now** (after the Gog and Magog war is over) will I bring again the captivity of Jacob, and have mercy upon **the whole house of Israel**, and will be jealous for My holy Name; 26 After that they have borne their shame, and all their trespasses whereby they have trespassed against Me, when they dwelt safely in their land, and none made [them] afraid. 27 When I have brought them again from the people, and gathered them out of their enemies' lands, and am sanctified in them in the sight of many nations; 28 Then shall they know that I [am] the LORD their God, which caused them to be led into captivity among the heathen: but I have gathered them unto their own land, and **have left none of them any more there.** 29 Neither will I hide my face any more from them: for I have poured out My Spirit upon the house of Israel, saith the Lord GOD.*

Eze. 36:22-28 Therefore say unto the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; I do not this for your sakes, O house of Israel, but for Mine holy name's sake, which ye have profaned among the heathen, whither ye went. 23 And I will sanctify My great Name, which was profaned among the heathen, which ye have profaned in the midst of them; and the heathen shall know that I [am] the LORD, saith the Lord GOD, when I shall be sanctified in you before their eyes. 24 For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land. 25 Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. 26 A new heart (a new life) also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you (so: born-again followers of God): and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. 27 And I will put My spirit within you (baptism in the Spirit), and cause you to walk in My statutes, and ye shall keep My judgments, and do [them]. 28 And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be My people, and I will be your God.

This return of whole Israel happens simultaneously with the great worldwide revival.

Isa. 11:10-11 And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; **to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.**

In the end-time many of the in human eyes lost 10 tribes already will be Christianised and will share the great world-wide revival.

Hos. 3:4-5 For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod⁹, and [without] teraphim¹⁰ (without an own king and without religion) 5 Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the LORD their God, and David their king (picture of Jesus); and shall fear the LORD and His goodness **in the latter days** (in the end-time).

This Christianising of the whole of Israel happens in such a wonderful way, that **144.000 Christians out of the people of Israel, and out of the Jews, will belong to these "first-fruits" unto God and unto the Lamb** (Rev. 14:4).

Rev. 7:1-8 And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree. 2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, 3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads (this calling and sealing of these predestined firstborns happens before the judgements begin) . 4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: [and there were] sealed an hundred [and] forty [and] four thousand of **all** the tribes of the children of Israel. 5 Of the tribe of **Juda** [were] sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Reuben** [were] sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Gad** [were] sealed twelve thousand. 6 Of the tribe of **Aser** were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Nephtalim** [were] sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Manasses** [were] sealed twelve thousand. 7 Of the tribe of **Simeon** were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Levi** [were] sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Issachar** [were] sealed twelve thousand. 8 Of the tribe of **Zabulon** [were] sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Joseph** (Ephraim)[were] sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of **Benjamin** [were] sealed twelve thousand.

Rev. 14:1-5 And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion (picture of the true Church), and with Him an hundred forty [and] four thousand, having his Father's Name (JHWH) written in their foreheads. 2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps: 3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts (living creatures), and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred [and] forty [and] four thousand, which were **redeemed from the earth** (they were as every man sinners before their perfect sanctification). 4 These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins (they are

⁹ Ephod = Something girt, a sacred vestment worn originally by the high priest (Exod. 28:4) afterwards by the ordinary priest (1 Sam. 22:18) and characteristic of his office (1 Sam. 2:18, 28, 14:3) It was worn by Samuel, and also by David (2 Sam. 6:14) It was made of fine linen, and consisted of two pieces, which hung from the neck, and covered both the back and front, above the tunic and outer garment (Exod. 28:31) That of the high priest was embroidered with divers colours. The two pieces were joined together over the shoulders (hence in Latin called superhumerales) by clasps or buckles of gold or precious stones, and fastened round the waist by a "curious girdle of gold, blue, purple, and fine twined linen" (Exod. 28:6-12). The breastplate, with the Urim and Thummim, was attached to the ephod.

¹⁰ Teraphim = Givers of prosperity, idols in human shape, large or small, analogous to the images of ancestors which were revered by the Romans. In order to deceive the guards sent by Saul to seize David, Michal his wife prepared one of the household teraphim, putting on it the goat's-hair cap worn by sleepers and invalids, and laid it in a bed, covering it with a mantle. She pointed it out to the soldiers, and alleged that David was confined to his bed by a sudden illness (1 Sam. 19:13-16). Thus she gained time for David's escape. It seems strange to read of teraphim, images of ancestors, preserved for superstitious purposes, being in the house of David. Probably they had been stealthily brought by Michal from her father's house. "Perhaps," says Bishop Wordsworth, "Saul, forsaken by God and possessed by the evil spirit, had resorted to teraphim (as he afterwards resorted to witchcraft); and God overruled evil for good, and made his very teraphim (by the hand of his own daughter) to be an instrument for David's escape.", Deane's David, p. 32 Josiah attempted to suppress this form of idolatry (2 Kings 23:24) The ephod and teraphim are mentioned together in (Hos 3:4) It has been supposed by some (Cheyne's Hosea) that the "ephod" here mentioned, and also in (Jud. 8:24-27) was not the part of the sacerdotal dress so called (Exod. 28:6-14) but an image of JaHWeh overlaid with gold or silver (comp.) (Jud. 17:1-18:1ff; 1 Sam. 21:9, 23:6 and 9; 30:7,8) and is thus associated with the teraphim.

perfectly pure of any sex feeling. Sex namely may tend to idolatry). These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever He goeth. These were **redeemed** from among men, [being] the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb. 5 And in their mouth was found no guile: **for they are without fault before the throne of God.**

After the wedding festival of God's Lamb these 144.000 will, as the "man-child", spiritually grow up to the height of perfection within the spiritual body of the Bride, and will be spiritually born out of her.

Rev. 12:5 *And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron (he will take part in the judgement of the anti-christ nations with the Lord Jesus, Rev. 19:15, Rev. 3:27): and her child was caught up unto God, and to His throne.*

Isa. 66:7-11 *Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child.*

These in Canaan returned Israelites, under which the "firstborns unto God and unto the Lamb", being hidden in the spiritual body of the Bride, will organise in Jerusalem great worldwide outreaches.

Isa. 2:2-3 *And it shall come to pass **in the last days**, [that] the mountain of the LORD'S house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it (the great world-wide revival). 3 And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.*

Isa. 4:2 *In that day (the end-time) shall the branch of the LORD be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth [shall be] excellent and comely for them that are escaped of Israel.*

When their task on earth is fulfilled the 144.000 (the man-child) by the Spirit of God will be caught unto God and His throne in heaven.

Rev. 12:5 *And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and [to] his throne.*

6. When the great tribulation begins, the Bride, herself, in the power of the Spirit, will flee to the desert. The Bride is then still in an unchanged body, and like Philip (Acts 8:39-40) she will be transported up to her shelter place in the wilderness, where she will be kept hidden for the terror of the anti-christ during 3½ year.

Rev. 12:6 *And the woman (the Bride of God's Lamb) fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred [and] threescore days (3 ½ year of the great tribulation).*

Rev. 12:14-16 *And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle (picture of the Holy Spirit), that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. 15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood (the anti-christ nations which search to mortify her, Rev 17:15) after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. 16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth (a great earthquake, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.*

7. The bodily return of the Lord Jesus Christ on the clouds of heaven.

Then in a twinkling of an eye, at the last trump, the Bride will put on a spiritual, resurrected body, and with the out of the death resurrected, righteous souls, she will meet the Lord and the 144.000 in the clouds. Then they, with the Lord Jesus Christ and the 144.000, return to the earth to establish God's Kingdom of 1000 years.

1 Cor. 15:51-57 *Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, **at the last trump**: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. 55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? 56 The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

1 Th. 4:13-18 *But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. 14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him. 15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. 16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17 Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 18 Wherefore comfort one another with these words.*

The end of part 1

The sermon of the Lord Jesus Christ on the mount:

Part 2

Our earthly Divine calling: "And you shall be *My* witnesses."

"So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, we are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do."

Luke 17:10

1.

You are the light of the world

(Matthew 5:14)

Besides the salt-forming (the becoming of salt by the hand of the Lord, see Matthew 5:13, viz. the forming of the new person), **we must also become the light of the world.** Both these works are done by the anointing of the Holy Spirit, on the basis of our faith and our submission. The salt-forming is the introductory work in order to prepare us according to the will of God. We were born sinners, but by the Holy Spirit we are redeemed from our sinful "I"-life, and we are transformed until we will have the wonderful Jesus-life within us.

But besides this the anointing is also meant to make us witnesses for our fellowmen that we might bring others into the circle of God's grace by the power of the Holy Ghost. Many only witness in the Church, but we should not only do that, but the more so in the world outside. So that is the most important place, our most important (work)field. We must try to draw people out of the world until they learn to live for Jesus, until they are open to the grace of Jesus Christ. This then is the spreading of light. And this, too, is a work of the Holy Spirit. For without the power of the Lord no witness is possible. For the world is evil, is in the grip of satan. When we try to witness in our own power, people will laugh at us. They will proclaim us to be simple or some such thing, as the wisdom of God is folly to the world. When we do not witness in Jesus' power, the testimony will have no value at all.

Let us first read the verses 14-16 from Matthew 5:

"Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven."

Again: the spreading of light in this world is an impossible task in the power of man. In man there is no possibility to spread light. For Jesus says: *"I am the Light of the world"*, and it is Jesus, Who by the work of the Holy Spirit in us, will make this light to shine through us. Therefore, without Jesus' work through the anointing, through His Holy Spirit, no light is possible. Neither is this possible through good works that **we** might do.

There is a beautiful song in a Dutch hymnbook, which reads: *"Everything that is done out of love for Jesus, will remain."* This is a lie, for this could just be man's will. One might want to do a whole lot of things for Jesus, but when done in one's own power these things will have no value at all. They must be done because of the work of the Holy Spirit within us. They must **not** be our own works, but works of the Holy Spirit through us. **He** must inspire us. **He** must lead us. **He** must urge us. So, this goes for both works: the spreading of the light as well as the works on behalf of the people around us. In both cases it is a matter of the anointing, God's Spirit working in and through us.

The light should be on a mountain. A mountain is in this case the type for the power of the Holy Spirit. This goes also for the candleholder. The candleholder and the mountain are both types for the power of the Holy Spirit. We must be driven by God's Spirit. In order to prove this, let us go to the text in Acts 1 verse 8:

"But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."

This witness only comes **after** that strengthening by the Holy Spirit. First the power of the Holy Ghost will come upon us, and then comes the witnessing.

In general one thinks too lightly of the "waiting in the upper room" of our spirit for this strength, this anointing. Let us therefore continue to prayerfully ask for these wondrous **powers** of the Lord, until He come in; let Him do His work in and through us, then we could witness of the Lord. We are **all** called to witness. To tell the world that He is risen, that He is a living Savior, and that He is a Helper in all circumstances of life. He will solve all problems if we put them in His hands. Satan's powers will then be overcome by our faith in Jesus Christ, and by our yielding to Him.

The Holy Spirit is therefore essential, it is the only way we could witness and spread light. We then would not only be able to speak **about** the Lord, for the Gospel does not only consist of words, but especially of power. We can read this in 1 Corinthians 2 verses 4 and 5. The preaching and teaching must be instigated by God's Spirit if they are to have eternal value.

*1 Cor. 2:4-5 And **my speech and my preaching was** not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in **demonstration of the Spirit and of power**: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God."*

That is what it is all about: the power of God, which is the anointing. This anointing must work, and that anointing works when the Word is spoken in the power and authority of the Holy Ghost. So it is not the word itself: a beautiful speech; This will have no value whatsoever, no effect, for it is **the living Word** (i.e. Jesus) Who must do His work. **He** must change us; **He** must bring us to repentance, to conviction of sins and to confession of guilt and to submission. Then the Lord can heal us. It is the power of Jesus, which must achieve this on the basis of the spoken word; otherwise it is all in vain. Therefore, we might have given lots of messages without them having any eternal value if they were brought in our own human strength, without the Holy Spirit's urging, blessing and anointing. We are to ask for this enormous anointing at all times, His power alone is able to work this, could be a light to people.

There is a connection between the salt-forming and the spreading of the light: the more we have the new nature within us, the more we can carry this with us, the greater light we spread by the Spirit's power, the greater power the Lord could develop through us. There are different kinds of power, and there is a power to the spreading of light. John 1 verse 12 also speaks of a power:

*"But as many as received him, to them gave he power to **become** the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name."*

Scripture speaks here also about power and strength, but this is not a power and strength to witness, but to **become** a witness. This has to do with the salt-making, and not with the spreading of the light. These powers and strengths of the Holy Ghost are introductory powers and strengths that will transfer us into children of God, sons of God. The other powers and strengths I spoke of before, are to do with spreading of the light, with witnessing, and testifying to others; passing the Word of Truth to others. Any man must first be formed by the Lord. We should not mix these up.

As we read: the lit candle, this strengthening to witnessing, should not be hidden. We read in Matthew 5 verses 14-16, that the light should not be hidden under a bushel, but should be placed on a candlestick. A bushel is the type for the daily cares of life. The light should not be hindered by the daily cares. The daily worries and burdens should not become dominant. Our ministry should be uppermost, should be free, above all daily cares. We should be willing to serve Him, without cares. We should not worry, for the Lord wants to provide in all our needs, and we are to put all this in His hands, focus on Him and not on the circumstances. We should continue to walk and witness with that focus on the Lord. We should therefore not be influenced by daily cares, but hand these over to the Lord. Let us go to Luke 8 verse 16:

"No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light."

A vessel refers to food and drink, and "a bed" could refer to sexuality or laziness, not wanting to work for the Lord because of these things. All these human things: a bushel, a vessel, and a bed refer to daily human life. Man's daily life should not wrongly influence the witness-life; prevent us from being witnesses. We should **at all times** be prepared to be witnesses for the Lord as God's Spirit speaks through us: that we might be capable to witness. We must always have the preparation of the Gospel of peace. As it says in Ephesians 6 verse 15: *"And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace"*. We must have a willing heart to testify of Jesus if God's Spirit urges us to do this. And this should not be hindered by "vessel" or "bed" or "bushel". Therefore, the human everyday things should not have the emphasis, but as children of the Lord we should first and foremost be wanted to do this: Proclaim the Gospel to others that they too might share in the grace of Jesus Christ.

Matthew 25 verses 18 and 24 are about the man that hides his talent:

"But he that had received one (talent) went and dug in the earth, and hid his lord's money."

"Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed."

This servant of the Lord had received power (talents have nothing to do with earthly things, these talents refer to divine things), powers and strengths of the Holy Ghost to witness. (The one receives this and the other that. One will receive more power to witness, the other less.) But this man buried his power in the earth; a different text says: "hidden in his sweatcloth". A "sweatcloth" refers to labor on earth, and earth to earthly things. So, the earthly things

took preference with him; he buried his talent under them. Instead of using his talent it was buried under earthly needs. Things of the earth were more important to him.

Moreover, he accused the Lord, that He was so strict. Instead of admitting his laziness, he said: *"You are strict, You mow where You did not sow, You make us work."* He accused the Lord of having to work. People which have received power from the Lord, will eventually be rejected because of this laziness, and their part is with the cursed, because they would not work while the Lord gave them power for it. It is wonderful to receive something from the Lord, but we must invest; use this. We must make the most of it; we must work with it. Let us **not** follow this man's example, and deem the earthly things greater, and bury our talent under earthly cares, earthly pleasures like food and drink or under a "bed" (all thoughts in relation to "bed").

2.

The purpose of anointing

The purpose is in the first place to receive power that we could bind satan. We must first receive power, for we dealt with a resistance, an adversary. He (satan) will try his best to prevent us from witnessing of the living Lord. Let us then be aware of such an enemy.

Luke 11:21-22: "When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace: But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armor wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils."

We have here such a strong man, satan, who has the people he wants to keep bound in sin, in his power. As long as the people are in that power, they are at peace. Especially when they are doing well they will have no need at all of the Lord and of religion; they are at peace. But when we, standing in the power of Jesus, overcome satan, we could snatch the people that are under satan's power, out of his claws. We are to exert power to deliver these people out of satan's power. For this purpose we have received power from Jesus.

He gives the strength and the anointing of the Holy Ghost in the first place to defeat satan, to break his chains. We must break satan's power in the Name of Jesus, and pray for the people. In the Name of Jesus we must break the powers of satan that hold them captive. Our testimony therefore must be preceded by prayerful warfare, for satan is to be defeated. His power and dominion over the people must be destroyed.

The world is in the power of the evil one. But we must overcome the evil one. And we have the power to overcome him, for we have received strength from the Lord. We can use His Name to destroy satan. We must, **in the Name of Jesus**, break the powers of unbelief, of doubt and of false interpretation of the Word: that we could get a hold on the souls, the hearts, and that they might listen and hear what is truly the will of God.

For many hardly know that will of God. They do not know that the Lord asks us to share in His **death** and His **resurrection**. Many believe that Jesus' death on the cross was sufficient, and that they now only will receive blessings, while we, too, are to undergo the work of His death on the cross if we are to receive the blessing. So, satan's might is to be broken, and for that purpose we need His power. We will receive it from Jesus if we have received Jesus' anointing. The entire anointing is **experiencing Jesus through us**. Let us go to Ephesians 6 verse 10:

*"Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of **his** might."*

Do we understand what it means "in the power of His might"? The power of God's might is His omnipotence. God is omnipotent. He has far more power than we ever could dream up. There is a **limitless power** that will be given unto us if we are open to it. But do we grasp that might? We must clothe ourselves therewith in faith; we must put on that might, in faith, like a robe, like an armor; take possession of it, stand in that might and command satan: "In the Name of Jesus".

Then we shall see that God is with us. He reveals Himself, and He gives us that strength, and every time we are in battle against satan the Lord is with us. He saith "I help you, I strengthen you, with the right hand of My justice". It is Jesus; we will do battle **with Him**; our witness always goes together with the work for Him, it is always "Jesus and we".

And that anointing always works through us. We labor, Jesus labors with us in the strength of God's might. So, let us never forget: we work together with the Lord. If we do not see this, and grasp it, we will receive nothing; but we must have our eyes on this gift of God, and stand therein in faith.

The second purpose of the anointing is to work in that given strength, to witness for the edification of the Lord's Church.

Acts 1:8 "But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."

Let us proceed to Matthew 16 verses 18 and 19:

"And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." (verse 18)

Here we see again the combination of Jesus and us. Peter means rock (petra), and Jesus says: "On this petra"; thus: on faith as Peter's, "I shall build my church". So, it is the Lord Who builds His Church, through us. But we

must witness, speak the Word, proclaim our testimony; then Jesus will reveal His power through our testimony. In this context it is written:

*Psalm 127:1a "Except the Lord build the house, they labor **in vain** that build it."*

When we work in and through the Lord the powers of hell cannot resist this work; but we must stand in faith: "He is with me, He strengthens me, He speaks through me". It must be natural, as natural as our breathing. When we speak we do it by exhaling. God's Spirit is also called wind or breath (the Hebrew word "ruach"). In any case, He goes through us; He works through us.

His power is entwined with our testimony.

"And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven." (Matthew 16:19)

Here He says: "I shall give you"; after His resurrection He gives His disciples the keys for further labor. Keys are instruments to open doors, to give access to. They give us power to open doors, to give access to terrains that were previously closed off. There is also access to the hearts of the people one witnesses to, and access to the church. These are all powers of the Lord, that He will give us, whereby satan's opposition is broken.

When one opens in the Name of Jesus, it will be opened in heaven. God's power will work in heaven, when we work. When we close, heaven closes; when we open, heaven opens. These works are synchronic, they work simultaneously: we and heaven. When we go out in the Name of Jesus, in the power of Jesus, we work together: He and we. This is inseparable. Let us go to Ephesians 6 verse 17 b:

"And take... the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God."

The sword **of the Spirit**: we must take it up; we must proclaim the Word; we must speak it. You see here again that going together: "we and the Holy Ghost", that entwining. So, we witness the Word of God, and God's Spirit works through our testimony and confirms it. It is in that submission and in that knowledge that we must walk and work. He works through us, He strengthens us; His strength goes through us, His authority goes through us, and His divine power works through us. Satan must go.

When we stand in faith in this way, and act in this faith, then satan must go and then our witness will bear fruit. He has given us the keys. In another place they are called talents, or powers of the Holy Spirit; it all means the same. They are gifts of God's Spirit, revelations of the Spirit through us. When Jesus had not yet fulfilled His death on the cross, He had temporarily delegated His disciples.

Matthew 10:1 "And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease."

We see here that there are two divine powers. One to cast out unclean spirits, and the other is to heal the sick. These are two different revelations (gifts) of the Holy Ghost, cast out devils and heal diseases, besides, of course, the power to proclaim the Gospel. And these powers we must ask of the Lord, ask and receive, and stand in the faith, that as we act in Jesus' Name, we will receive these things that people will **experience** the anointing and the power. We will see, that when we are sincere, that that anointing will come through us and will take possession of us, and we will be able, in Jesus' strength, to heal the sick and to cast out demons. When that anointing does not work, our labor will have no value at all. Nothing will be achieved then.

Matthew 11:12 "And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force."

Here we see the same thing. In the power of Jesus the kingdom is won, the kingdom that is still occupied by satan, namely all the people's hearts in the world, which are still in satan's possession, must be taken from him by force, for satan will not let them go voluntarily, will not give them up voluntarily. We must therefore deliver these people in the Spirit's power. Satan's power must be driven from those hearts, and they must be taken possession of, with force, else they will not be able to enter the kingdom. Thus, we must take hold of these hearts with the force of Jesus; of the Holy Spirit. This force is thus aimed at satan, because satan holds these hearts, but when One comes Who is stronger than satan, He could chase away satan and take the spoil.

So it is here, in the Lord's power the hearts are delivered. For satan has his claws in their mind, in their thoughts, and they think according to his will. And those claws must be extracted. And it is the power of the Holy Spirit which must achieve this. We must come in Jesus' strength to deliver the people. There must be deliverers. That is why there will be more and more power in the end-times that people might arise to work this. Servants of the Lord, clothed with strength and power, who will deliver people out of their satanic thinking. We read this in Obadiah 21:

"And saviors (deliverers, namely out of the power of satan) shall come up on mount Zion to judge the mount of Esau; and the kingdom shall be the Lord's."

It says here "saviors", but the literal translation speaks of deliverers: people that set free from satan and from his coercion to sin. For people might be willing to be good, but they cannot, they fall into sin. They might come with good intentions for the new year to lead a better life, but they fall back in their old sins again and again. They have no strength. They must be delivered. There must be people who come to break these bands in the Name of Jesus. Saviors shall come up on Esau's mount. Esau was the first son of Isaac and a worldly person, while Jacob (the second son) was a spiritual person. Jacob sought the things of God, and Esau sought the things of the earth. Christians with a worldly outlook, must be turned around in the power of the Spirit, they must be delivered from their worldly bands and from their earthly possessions.

These people only ask God's blessings for their earthly life: a better job, a sweet wife, a beautiful home, a beautiful car, all of this kind of earthly things. Their focus must be drawn away from these, and must be brought under God's will, to the eternal things. The deliverers will do this in the power of Jesus. Then the kingdom will be the Lord's. Then the kingdom will be in the hearts of the children of Esau: they will become devoted Christians, spiritual-minded children of God. (Luke 16:16 speaks of the same thing.)

Luke 10:19 "Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you."

So, anointed administrators of the Word receive might from the Lord over all power of the enemy, even satan himself. We are not to fear, for the Lord has given us this. He does not abandon us in the power of satan. He has given us power, in the Name of Jesus, to bind, to destroy everything that satan uses to oppose us and to attack us. Let us stand on the things of the Lord. He gives us the keys. He gives us strength; He gives us power to destroy satan. We must hold on to that. Jesus gave it to us, let us be willing to do it. And this was not only said to the twelve, for these are the words He spoke to the seventy. People, sent by Jesus.

Let us go to 2 Corinthians 10 verses 4 to 6:

"(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled."

We see here that every thought that is not from God, must be taken captive, and brought before the Lord. Also people's thinking. Every thought of man that opposes, that resists, and that rebels must be broken and bound in the Name of Jesus. Also our own thinking we must take and lay in obedience at the feet of the Lord. So, not only our actions and our walk, but also the inner man of our thinking.

As soon as we notice that things are not from the Lord; are not right, we should immediately cover them by the blood, take them captive and put before Jesus: "Under Your blood, Lord." That they might be washed off by His omnipotence. Be gone! And we must chase away satan. He is not to have one millimetre of our thinking.

First we must walk in obedience ourselves; only then could we warn others. So, we should not admonish others when we ourselves still fall short. We cannot tell others not to do something when we still do it ourselves. One cannot say: Mark my words, not my deeds. Therefore one must oneself first be obedient to Jesus in order to be able to admonish others.

Colossians 4:12 "Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always laboring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God."

Epaphras fought in prayer, he did not fight people, but satan. The satanic forces that tried to mislead and tempt the Colossians, he rebuked in prayer: the forces that hurt the Church. It is written: **At all times doing battle in prayer.** We see here the readiness to do battle of this God's servant, who used his anointing to fight satan. We should use this anointing in the first place against satan, to destroy him. Just as it is written in Romans 16 verse 20 a:

"And the God of peace shall bruise satan under your feet shortly..."

That is the objective: we must destroy, destroy, again: destroy him. Therefore our witness must always be preceded by this prayerful warfare against the opposing powers. We cannot witness without **first** breaking this resistance of satan's in our prayers. When we want to witness to someone we must first, in the Name of Jesus, do away with these powers of satan: the spirits of unbelief, of resistance. Before approaching someone we must first go into our inner room to get rid of this resistance. We must also do this before preaching: get rid of all opposing powers in Jesus' Name.

We will now go to **the third purpose** of our anointing: i.e. to form those that have accepted our witness into a local church. The church must be formed out of the world. We must bring those people that do not yet believe to faith in Jesus by our testimony of the risen Lord, we must make them to submit to Jesus that the kingdom of God be established in their hearts, come into their hearts.

Matthew 9:38: "Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth laborers into his harvest."

We see here that the emissive power of Jesus is necessary, the urge of the Holy Ghost, to be able to work. It is the Lord that must do it; we are to feel the urge. We must be emitted, pushed out: "Labor, witness **now**". Without His sending, without His power, without Jesus' will in us, we cannot do anything. We are members of His body. The hand cannot do anything without the head telling it pick up, to hold something, or to get a cup to drink. The head gives the order. As soon as that order is there, the hand will act. If the connection is broken, the nerves will not work anymore; then the head may give its impulse to the hand, but the hand will not do anything. One then has a lame hand. But as soon as the nerves work, there is a connection and the muscles will work.

So it is with the Lord, we should expect everything from the Lord. He sends us into the work field, He urges us to do so, He makes us to work for Him, and He gives the orders. Without His commands one had better wait quietly on Him, and stay in the preparation of the Gospel. And as soon as He says: "Go!", then do it.

Romans 10:15a "And how shall they preach, except they be sent?"

You cannot really preach when you are not **sent**. We are to wait for and **experience** that sending. It is imperative for that sending to take place first; then one could preach. The emission into the vineyard must come from the Lord;

it's only then that it will have effect. For then the command is His. Then one's labor is legitimate, gone out from Jesus Himself.

Many say to have been sent, and are not. Then happens what is written in 1 Corinthians 3 verse 12-15: "Their labor is like wood, hay, stubble". This means that, when people are won over by such preaching, they will soon be lost again when they get into trouble. When they meet with problems on their way, they will forsake the Lord. The fire of trials and tribulations burns everything. They were won over **by man's** convictions, without the Holy Spirit's power.

Let us go to John 20 verse 21:

*"Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, **even so** send I you."*

The same command the Father gave Jesus, He gives to us. The Messianic task of Jesus is now upon our shoulders, we must do likewise. Let us go to Isaiah 61 verses 1 to 3:

"The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn." (verses 1-2)

As Jesus was anointed to do all this, so are we, as servants of the Lord, anointed to also do this: to bring the good news to the meek, to bind up the brokenhearted, etc., etc.

"To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes..." (verse 3a)

In the old days people put ashes on their head when they were grieving, and they walked in sackcloth. Hence the proverb: "In sackcloth and ashes". But instead of ashes the newly converts will receive a crown, a jewel, from the Lord.

"The oil of joy for mourning..." (verse 3b)

Instead of sadness those that have submitted to the Lord, will receive the anointing with the Holy Spirit of joy and happiness.

"The garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness..." (verse 3c)

They will receive the garment of praise instead of an anxious spirit, anxious because of the sin(s) they committed. And because they are delivered from sin they can, after having confessed their sins, praise the Lord because He was merciful to them. These things we must also achieve.

"That they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that he might be glorified." (verse 3d)

We must therefore labor for His glory, not that of ourselves. We see here, that the anointing, which was on Jesus, has come upon us. We receive the same anointing for the same message. The Messianic anointing, which was on Him is now on us that, we may go on. He is the Head and we are the Body. Together we are one. The same anointing of the Messiah is now come upon us in order for us to do the redemptive work on earth, and this same anointing will one day make us to reign with Him as princes and kings in God's Kingdom for all eternity.

The fourth purpose of this anointing is to work **wonders and signs in the Name of Jesus**, as a confirmation of the spoken Word. They are the Holy Spirit's powers that work these things.

Acts 3:6 "Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk."

Here we see that Peter let the anointing work through him. He had received the anointing, and let it work in the Name of Jesus.

Acts 4:4 "Howbeit many of them which heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand."

We see here that by the power of the anointing, by signs and wonders, and the word of the preaching, souls were added. This is for the edification of the church through the working of miracles and signs in the Name of Jesus Christ.

3.

Gifts of the Spirit; ministrations of the Lord, actions of God.

Let us go to the chapter of the anointing:

1 Cor. 12:1-6: "Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of ministrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all."

We see here that there are gifts of the Spirit. There are revelations of the Holy Ghost and it is one and the same Spirit. There are different gifts, nine gifts are mentioned here (in 1 Cor. 12:8-10), nine gifts of the Spirit; there are

also ministrations, but the same Lord. The works too are different; the gifts could therefore be used in different ways. So, do not think that because one is not used to something, that it is not from the Lord. When someone else's ministry is different from ours, one must not think that it is not from the Holy Spirit. There are different kinds of ministrations. It is the same God, Which works them all. Let us therefore be careful, and not judge, just because we are not used to it. If we are not accustomed to a gift being worked in a certain way, we are not to say: "That is not from God". Or when certain ministrations are done differently, we are also not to say: "That is not from God". Just remember: There is a great diversity of ministrations, perhaps a hundredfold. Each gift can work in a totally different way. As we shall see later, there are also gifts of healing, many, not just one gift, but gifts. And all those gifts could all work differently, be used different, but they are all revelations of the same God. Let us therefore be careful not to immediately judge if we experience other people's actions or ministries, the working of a gift, differently than how our own minister does it, or how workers known to us do it. Let us leave that in the Lord's hands.

There are different ministrations. Let us go to Ephesians 4 verse 11:

"And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers."

These ministrations are given by the Lord to form the Body of Christ into **living, true** witnesses of Him in this world. He thus calls them to: apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers. A pastor (shepherd) looks after and protects the church; a teacher teaches that which he has received from the Lord; evangelists bring the message of the Gospel to the worldly men; the prophet is the direct mouthpiece of the Lord. God speaks directly through the prophet; apostles have an all-round ministry, and are in general the leaders of the Church of Jesus Christ. Five ministries are mentioned here. But again: there are different kinds of labor. Also, the manner of labor is different. A pastoral job could be executed differently. An apostolic ministry could be done differently, and also the teachings and the gospel preaching. Remember well: There is diversity in ministrations, and also in actions. One is called unto these ministries by the Lord, and He calls whom He will. Not everyone could therefore become an apostle; not every-one a shepherd (pastor); not everyone a prophet; not everyone a teacher, and not everyone an evangelist. One must not do what one wants oneself, but God calls whom He will.

Let us go to Mark 3 verses 13-15:

"And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him. And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils."

"Whom He will". So, it is the will of Jesus Himself for us to be His labourers. Everyone is called to be His witness, but with these five ministrations it concerns a predestination of the Lord. Here He called twelve unto Himself to be apostles, they were the ones He wished to call thereto. We cannot become apostles of our own volition, but Jesus is to call us thereto. Again: everyone of us is called to be a witness, but some He has given a specific task to prepare the church for witnessing that the testimony within us be perfect; for the testimony is only then perfect if we ourselves, as witnesses, are clothed with **God's power**.

Let us go to Mark 16 verses 17-18:

"And these signs shall follow them that believe..." (verse 17 a)

The signs that follow go also with **those that believe**. So, not only with one of the five mentioned ministrations, but also with believers. Even believers ought to be able to do this, if they have come to maturity, if they have the anointing, and stand in the anointing. So these gifts are given to believers too.

"...In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover." (verses 17 b-18)

You see here signs that go with faith, as a confirmation of their witness. Every believer, every witness of the Lord must be forceful, must stand in the power of the Lord. Even if they are not called to be an apostle; not called to be a teacher, not called to be an evangelist or to preach or to be a pastor; as believers they ought to be able to do this, viz. this miracle-working action in the Name of Jesus. They must be able to witness in the power of the Holy Ghost that each believer minister to others and tell the Gospel, together with the signs and wonders, the casting out of devils, and the healing of the sick. Hence we must desire a complete anointing; whichever calling and whichever function we have in the Church, even if we belong to that large group that only is to witness.

Besides the five ministrations we also have other ministries. Let us go to 1 Corinthians 12 verses 29-30:

"Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?"

Not all are apostles; not all are prophets; not all are teachers. Not everybody can perform miracles in the power of the Lord. Not everybody has the gifts of healing. **Not everybody speaks in tongues**. Not everybody is an interpreter. They are all different people with different gifts and a different anointing, a different action of the anointing. We see here, that not everybody is the same. Every member of the body is different, the one receives this, the other that, according to the will of the Lord. The actions and the ministries may all be different. Let us take that into account. Not everybody has the same gifts, but we all are children of the Lord.

1 Cor. 12:31 *"But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way."*

That way is the way of love. We read this in Chapter 13. It mainly concerns the sanctified and transformed person, it is mainly about the work of the fruit of the Holy Spirit. It is not the gifts, even if they are all needed, but what we need most is love in our hearts; the fruit of love. This must come in the first place. For the gifts all will disappear in eternity, for they will no longer be needed, only love will not vanish.

1 Cor. 13:8-10 and 13: "Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away."

"And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity."

There is then no need anymore for the prophet to prophesy, we do not need to speak in tongues anymore. In the end there will be no need for teachers anymore; i.e. when everyone shall have reached fullness. Therefore it is the love of God, which renews us, which is most important. The Lord renews us. Gifts are necessary for the edification of the Church here on earth: to form a Church out of the world, but in eternity there is no need for these. Then that which is perfect is come. But we shall have to have a closer look at these gifts of the Spirit nonetheless.

4. Gifts of the Spirit.

Let us go to 1 Corinthians 12 verse 8-11:

"For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will."

As He will. That is a very special addition. We cannot alter that. We can, however, desire more gifts, for in verse 31 it is written: *"But covet earnestly the best gifts"*. We are allowed to covet those best gifts. We are allowed to ask for (more) gifts, but it is **His will** that counts. He does according to His will, and we may covet. There are diverse gifts.

Let us go to Romans 12 verses 4-8:

"For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or he that teacheth, on teaching; Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness."

These are different actions of the Body, and there are gifts. We are all members of this Body, and there are diverse gifts, according to the grace given to us, and according to our function in the Body of Christ. Depending of this the gifts are given, and let us use the gifts: be it prophecy according to the measure of faith; be it serving, in the serving; be it teaching, in the teaching; be it admonition, in the admonishing; be it sharing, in simplicity: thus, who gives to others; think for example on the serving at the tables or on the giving of money or articles. Whoever practices charity, let him do it gladly. There are diverse gifts and everybody is different; everyone has his own part in the Body of Christ. Let us accept one another, and value and respect each other wherever the Lord has placed us. And let not the one think: "That one is only a little finger". A little finger is also necessary. And often the least is needed for the functioning of the whole: A watch has different parts. But if the smallest part, the smallest wheel is missing, the watch does not work. In the same way everyone should be accepted, every little part should be accepted.

1 Peter 4:10-11 "As every man has received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen."

Our ministry, whether small or great, must be for the honor of the Lord only. Therefore all gifts are not meant to honor or glorify oneself, but are for the honor and glorification of the Lord Himself and for the edification of the Body of Christ; they are for ministering unto **others**. A gift is always meant to be handed out to others, to one's neighbour: that that other person may come to obedience and growth, to maturity. Gifts are revelations of God's Spirit through us for the salvation, forming and fulfilment of others. Even the least gift, witnessing, must be in and through the power of the Holy Ghost. This is what Acts 1 verse 8 also teaches us:

"But ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be my witnesses... "

It is only when the anointing, the Holy Ghost, has come over us that we can witness. It is this way: We speak, but the power comes from Him. It is the same as that which is written in Ephesians 6 verse 17:

"And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God."

We must take up "the sword of the Spirit", but it is the Holy Ghost Who works through us. It is a co-operation between the witness and the Spirit. Our spirit, our inner man, should therefore remain open to the Holy Spirit.

Whether in teaching, in preaching or in witnessing, we must always be aware of the fact: "He works through me. He is here at work with me and through me". Even when witnessing we must know: "I can not do anything myself: Lord help me, work through me, flow through me." There must be a flow through us of His work of grace, His liquid fire, towards that other person; for the persons we witness (speak) to are in satan's hands, and there is no other power to deliver them than only the power of Jesus Christ, Who defeated him (satan). We must therefore let His power, His victory, work through us to reach that person, otherwise we will not be able to reach his heart. And he will laugh or reject it, without us being able to reach him. Without the Holy Spirit's power we cannot proclaim the truth, God's offer, to him. We should understand that very well.

1 Cor. 12:1-3 "Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost."

It is written *"The Spirit of God, Who shall glorify Me"*. So: He will glorify Jesus. And when we speak through the Spirit we shall always glorify Him as the Lord of our lives. He is the King of our lives and also of the people's lives.

1 Cor. 12:4-7 "Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of ministrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal."

Here are mentioned gifts, revelations, of the indwelling Spirit. Hence, gifts are not given for us to do with according to our own will, but gifts are revelations, ministrations, of the Spirit through us; and **He** reveals that which **He** deems proper, good, that it might be useful for the one we speak to, the one we act for. This then is an ministration of the indwelling Spirit. Again, it is co-operation: We take up the sword, but the God's Spirit is the One Who actually wields it, through us. And we let ourselves be led, and let those streams of His Spirit go through us, knowingly. It is only then it can work in the hearts of others who hear it, who listen, that, because of this, all of satan's powers must yield.

We can distinguish the gifts of the Spirit in three groups. There are:

- **4 gifts of the spoken Word of God;**
- **3 gifts that work wonders and signs, and**
- **2 prayer gifts.**

We shall read again what is written, as these (gifts) are mentioned at random:

1 Cor. 12:8-11 "For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will."

Again, we must remember well that **"As He will"**. He gives to everyone His gifts, as He will Himself. The revelation of these gifts must therefore be up to Him, not to us. Yet He will never force us to bring gifts out into the open against our will. If we are not willing, He will stop. But, as for us, we should always be willing to serve Him.

The gifts of the Word

There are diverse gifts of the Word; amongst others there is the word of wisdom, and the word of knowledge. And knowledge is different. We just read that there is a diversity of ministrations. God's Spirit does not always work in one and the same way. He will work in one way and in a different way the next time. And if He works in a different way from what we are accustomed to, we should not immediately say: "This is not of the Lord". We must give Him space. The Spirit must be allowed to manifest, in full freedom, a diversity of ministrations, perhaps 100 different kinds of ministration, kinds of revelations. Also as concerns healings: there may be many ways. He clearly says: "gifts of healing". Not only certain gifts, but gifts: the one with oil, the other by the laying on of hands, the one by pointing, the other by speaking, yet another by the Word, sometimes by an anointed piece of cloth. The Lord Himself once used saliva and mud. The ways it takes place could be a hundredfold different. So it is with the word of knowledge. The word of knowledge could be: knowing God's will. He (the Spirit) makes known God's will to us. It might also be: the knowledge of someone's inner condition, the other's character. Someone else's thoughts might be revealed to one by the Spirit of God. He knows, also the secrets, someone hides deep within. A worker of God once said to a woman: "You have committed abortion so many times". God's Spirit had revealed that. She was startled: "How do you know?" God's Spirit revealed it. That is having knowledge of someone's inner spirit, his thinking and inner life. Having the word of knowledge could also concern the existence of occult spirits. This is also called discernment of spirits. We then discern: "This is of God, and that is not". So, the word of knowledge is different and works differently.

Prophecy is also a gift of the Word; the message then is spoken by the Holy Spirit through His laborer. Here, too, there are diverse manifestations: prophecy in one's own language, but also sometimes in a foreign language. Do you remember what happened in Acts 2? Let us go there.

Acts 2:7-11 "And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans? And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born? Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in

Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God."

You see here, that the tongues (languages) they uttered, were not what we call "tongues" in 1 Corinthians 14, for "tongues" are a mystery we speak directly to the Father; not to people, but to the Father. But (in above quoted verses) these were tongues, foreign languages, they uttered by the Spirit of God, whereby they did not speak to God, but **to the people**. So, one spoke to the Cretes, the other to the Arabs, yet another to this or that group of people; and they all heard God's great works proclaimed in their own language. This then was prophecy, in someone else's language not known to God's labourers themselves. To them this was "tongues", but it was not to the people. For the people it was their own language, and they understood. So, it was not the "tongues" as mentioned in 1 Corinthians 14 verse 2, where is written:

"For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries."

Here are the real "tongues" directed towards God. This is a prayer gift. We then speak directly to God in that "tongue". But the gift the 120 received, was not a prayer language, but a gift of the Word. They brought the Word to the people, and everyone understood it in his own language. It was not one language understood by all, but all spoke differently. Matthew spoke differently, James spoke differently, Peter spoke differently, each spoke a different language. And they all heard their own tongue. There were 120 disciples, and they all spoke aloud. That must have been quite some noise, but they (the people) all heard their own language. The one spoke in this way, the other in that. And this is the gift the Holy Spirit will work in us, when we, like Philip in Acts 8 verses 39-40, are taken up by the Spirit, e.g. to Russia, where we then will preach in Russian; we will not understand it, but the Russians will. Then one will be a preacher in the Russian language. Hereafter one might be transported to e.g. the Chinese. Then one has to preach in China, and one will speak Chinese, and so forth. God knows all languages, and He will speak through us. It then is God's Spirit speaking through us. This then is prophecy; but also tongues with or without interpretation, directly to a certain people

Gifts that work wonders and signs.

There are also gifts that work wonders and signs. Firstly I mention **the gift of faith**, whereby one could move mountains in Jesus' Name. This soul-saving faith is part of the fruit of the Spirit. We can read this in Galatians 5 verses 22-23a:

"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, Meekness, temperance..."

Faithfulness is translated incorrectly in my opinion. It is the Greek word "pistis", which is translated as faithfulness; this, however, should be "faith"; for the word translated with "faith" in Hebrews 11 verse 1 ("*Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.*") is also the Greek word "pistis". Opinion is incorrect Faith grows as part of the fruit of the Spirit, the same way this happens with love, with peace. Often, with people who have just turned to God, faith is still small; a fruit normally begins as something very small, the same way it is with faith being part of the fruit of the Spirit. When healthy, **this faith will increase**. However, to be able to work in wonders and signs of the Lord, the Lord will give one extra, wonderworking faith that one might stand in the faith of Jesus. One will thus receive an extra portion, a gift of revelation. One stands in a much stronger faith than normal. Then one could work wonders and signs in Jesus' Name. For it is written: "*Speak to this mountain, and it will be removed... if one has faith like a mustard seed*". The faith of Jesus is then real within us, and can work that gift of the Spirit, that one could work with wonders and signs.

Another gift of wonders and signs is **the gift of healing**. Together with these healings one could mention **the gift of casting out of devils**, for this, too, is a form of healing. When a devil has taken possession of one, one is "mad", sick of spirit. Sometimes a devil of dumbness takes possession of one, and one cannot talk. That person will then be healed by casting out that demon. Then that person will function normally again, and is able to choose for the Lord.

Then there is the **gift of power**, which is also a gift of wonders and signs, like the one that happened with Gideon when he said: "Sun stand still there and there", and "you, moon, there and there". That is a gift of power. The revelation by Moses when he split the sea in two, was also a gift of power. Nature's laws are defied. Gifts of power: mighty things happen when God's Spirit deems this necessary; He will then perform wonders and signs, causing things to happen that normally never would. So, we will receive gifts; the one in lesser, the other in greater measure, but God gives according to our need, according to our ministry.

In Luke 10 verse 19 we read that the Lord gave gifts to 70 disciples. That was before His crucifixion and ascension:

"Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you."

"Over all the power of the enemy". So, whatever enemy, he will be defeated by this gift, by this revelation. God's Spirit works through us in all power. He destroys all of satan's powers. Each opposing strength will be destroyed. This was clearly noticeable with the early Christians, and will be manifest in ever increasing measure in the end-times. And ultimately these works will destroy these (evil) powers, especially with those called thereto by God. For the Lord shall give these gifts especially to certain of His children, the one in lesser, the other in greater degree. We can also read this in Obadiah verse 21:

"And saviors (deliverers) shall come up on mount Zion to judge the mount of Esau; and the kingdom shall be the Lord's."

"Saviors": these are people who will deliver their neighbors from spiritual bondage. These people have especially received the powers to destroy satan and all his demonic powers. Many receive these powers, but they in particular. The allotment is different, according to the wisdom of the Spirit; the one will have more than the other; that is a fact. With the one the Spirit manifests Himself more than with another. The powers of satan will disappear by the word they speak in the Name of Jesus.

"To judge the mount of Esau". We know that Esau is the first son of Isaac. Esau and Jacob are his two sons. Isaac is a type for Jesus. As Abraham is the type for the Father, so is Isaac the type of the Son, and Jacob of the Holy son, but the Lord prevented him; it was just meant to be symbolical, for his life was to typify the life of the Son of God. The Son, Jesus, has two kinds of children: Esau's and Jacobs. Esau's are carnally-minded Christians. They have a horizontal view of life. They pray for a good job, for a sweet wife, for a house, for a beautiful car, for "a dream-this or a dream-that", anything to do with this carnal life. And if they receive that, they feel richly blessed. These then are the Esau's. But Jacob chose the right of the first born. He chose this above all else. While Esau wanted to hunt and loved good food, etc., Jacob chose the spiritual things. This is why the lives of the "Esau's" must be judged, be brought to spiritual views. Then these Esau-Christians will also have the Kingdom of God in their hearts, with the help of these saviors. They deliver "Esau-Christians" from this carnal spirit, of the bands of earthly possessions. These gifts of power therefore thwart nature's laws, like the calming of the storm by Jesus, and the paving of a way through the sea, which Moses had to do.

Prayer gifts.

Finally, there are also the prayer gifts, amongst others the prayer language or tongues, and the discernment of spirits: the discerning, in prayer, of the things of God and those of satan. These differences are seen in the prayer life. The prayer ministry is an unseen one, but it is an enormous ministry. Then the Spirit urges us to intercede for God's people, for a certain town or country.

There are more verses on these gifts.

1 Cor. 12:30-31 "Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret? But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way."

So, not all have the gifts of healing, are able to heal people. Not all speak in tongues. One could have the Spirit within, and yet not speak in tongues. One could speak in tongues, but not interpret. We see, that we are to "covet": we must pray for these (gifts). We must ask: "Lord, use me". It is not about us, but about the other person that must be saved, who needs the testimony of the Word; and all this must be done in the power of the Holy Spirit. By revelation of the gifts, by the gifts of the Word, by the explanation of teachings, by the preaching, by testimonies and by powers of wonders and signs, whereby people will be astounded, and will see that Jesus is alive: that He is the One He said He is in His Word: **the Lord**.

We already dealt with working for the Lord, viz. the being sent, and that that sending is according to His choice. What we all must do is witnessing in our neighborhood. If we have the opportunity, and are being urged by the Spirit to witness, we must do so to our neighbor. This again depends on the guidance of the Spirit. For we are not to witness in season and out of season, we are to do it with the guidance of the Spirit; for if our neighbor is not yet ready for it, one might achieve exactly the opposite from what was intended. If one's children are disobedient, unbelieving, and one continues to witness, they might in the end develop a dislike/aversion: they will be sick of it. But if the time is prepared thereto by God's Spirit, and our prayers, they will hunger for it, be open for it, and then God's Spirit will work through us and our witness will be effective. This happens by the gift of revelation of God's Spirit through us.

There are many other gifts, which are not mentioned in 1 Corinthians 12, amongst others the gifts of visions and gifts of dreams. The ministries, too, are manifold; five are mentioned in Ephesians, five chief ministries, but there are others, such as the ministry of helps in the Church. See 1 Corinthians 12 verse 28:

"And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues."

Here other ministries are mentioned than the five in Ephesians. But the ministry of witnessing is for everybody. Being a witness is also a kind of ministry of God's Spirit, for we serve the Spirit on behalf of someone else. And this is the best way to pass the Word, by word of mouth, from person to person. Many revivals happened this way: when we tell someone else, and that person repents because of our testimony. The great revival of Yonggi Cho in Korea happened this way: by personal testimony. The women would witness to others in their meetings. And those women would tell their husbands when they came home from work. So we see how a whole lot of actions, gifts of God's Spirit, can work through us. Ministries are therefore powers of the Holy Spirit through us in order to reach an other, to tell the other and to bring him God's Word.

5.

Gifts of the Spirit without the fruit of the Spirit are no guarantee for our personal salvation.

The love of God, that new nature, is eternal. We read that in 1 Corinthians 13 verses 8-10:

"Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away."

Love never perishes. In the literal translation it says: never fails. Not: does not perish evermore, but never fails! That love of God shall always reach its goal. All other are things we now still need, which now still functions with us; but when all will be perfect, then that shall vanish. Then all those gifts are no longer necessary, for then we shall see the truth and the reality of God's kingdom. Then we will be in it and we shall experience it, and will not need the temporary things anymore.

Just like a child that is growing up: the childlike things disappear. When he is grown up and still behaves childishly, then he is senile. An adult does not behave childishly, but if a person does, he is senile, which is not normal. But an adult behaves differently, acts differently. So it is with the spiritual things. We might, as an adult, be childlike. But being senile is a mental illness.

Gifts alone, without this Divine love, do **not** guarantee our eternal salvation. When we think, by speaking in tongues or by possessing other gifts, that we "have arrived", then we are mistaken. Let us read Matthew 7 verses 22-23:

"Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity."

One sees here an amazing ministry. Cast out devils, used powers, prophesied, and done many things. Powers of the Holy Spirit, revelations of the Spirit of God through persons, but **their own hearts** remained closed to that Spirit. One might be anointed by God's Spirit, while not receiving Him in one's heart. He uses you. When one has received those gifts, one could be unfaithful, but the gifts remain. God's Spirit will continue to work through one. When one sins, He will continue to work, the tongues remain.

There was a person in Indonesia, who fell in love with a choir girl while he was married; he left his wife and married her. And he said: "The Lord allows me this, for I still speak in tongues." These then are the works of iniquity. He spoke in tongues, but, as 1 Corinthians 13 says: No matter to what extent one speaks in tongues, but when one's heart is not renewed, and one does not have the love of God in one's heart, then one is nothing.

It can also be, that, when one has the gift of knowledge; one is a teacher; can explain everything from cover to cover; by the Spirit of God have knowledge of the will of the Spirit; but when one has not submitted oneself to the Spirit of God, but to one's own flesh, then one is nothing, one could still be lost. Paul said in 1 Corinthians 9 verses 26-27:

*"I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, **I myself should be a castaway.**"*

Preached to others; and the apostle Paul said that he should watch lest he himself, in the eyes of God, become reprehensible, thus fall into sin. We should watch especially in these end-times, for satan goes around like a roaring lion. He has declared all-out war to the Church, remember that. He aims to destroy the Church with all the means that he has. He wants to destroy the Christians, especially the sincere Christians. These days one can see the strangest things happen. We hear of "great" pastors who commit adultery, and of TV pastors who commit adultery, and also tell about these things here in Holland. This is not a single occasion, but it happens often.

Satan goes round like a roaring lion. He tries to tempt everybody, especially a sincere child of God, that they fall when they are not alert. Therefore, one has to be watchful, and keep an eye on the enemy, especially in these end-times. It is for this reason that the Lord gives a special anointing in these end-times. A one hundred percent anointing! A complete anointing!

6.

The end-time anointing

He (God) wants to make His dwelling in the **perfect power of His Holy Spirit**. Especially because satan has declared all-out war to the Church, the Spirit of God, and the Christians declare war to satan. Therefore, there will be a terrible war, God's tremendous power will be at work, and we can read that in Revelation 12 verses 7-11:

"And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil, and satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death."

Here we see war in heaven. Heaven itself, i.e. the heaven of God, where God dwells with the saints, knows no war. There is peace, eternal peace with God. But in which heaven is there war? That is the heaven on earth, namely in the hearts of the citizens of heaven, in the Body of Christ here on earth. In Philippians it is written, that we are expected to walk in heavenly bliss. Thus, normally, we, as healthy Christians, should have a heart, that walks in heaven, with the Lord. We worship Him, we walk with Him, we talk with Him, and we have contact with Him. We can also read this in Hebrews 12 verses 22-24:

"But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel."

In the spirit we thus walk among "the spirits of the perfectly righteous", here on earth already, and "with God and Jesus, our Mediator of the New Testament"; although we are not allowed to have a relationship with the spirits of our dead loved ones, and other dead righteous people. The heaven meant here in Revelation 12 verse 7 is therefore the heaven in our heart. And it is this heaven that is attacked by satan. For the dragon and his angels also waged war to destroy that heaven. And indeed this heaven of the Christians is continually attacked by satan. For as we look at the Church we see, that sincere Christians sin again and again, fall into wrong things again and again, and listen to satan.

And we know, that whoever sins, sins out of satan, because satan puts something in one's thoughts, one accepts that and allows it to work. Or he works through others, one follows up and, in fact, has then become a vassal of the evil one. But one is hardly aware of it. Later on one may notice, and be sorry for it. In any case, that heaven is stained. Over again there are smears, and the Lord now wants to remove these stains; from our thoughts, from the life of those citizens of heaven on earth. The Church is to be delivered from these stains from satan, must be made whole. Hence the war.

Thus, the war is to cleanse the Church from sin. To cleanse the Church from wrong teachings; to cleanse the Church from the limitations she has learned to apply to the word. These things must thus be removed from the Church, and war is needed for that in order to restore the Church.

Satan also does a lot of things. We read in Matthew 24 what he will do. He confuses one by bringing one in very difficult circumstances. As Matthew 24 says: *Wars and rumors of wars*; pressure from outside and from the circumstances, difficult circumstances satan creates; deceases, etc. he brings into the lives of people and of the Christians. We know satan tries to bring circumstances in such a way that one becomes stressed and anxious and in doubt of God's existence. This is his war, and he wages it with all his angels. But we must oppose it by not putting our focus on the circumstances, not to focus on the powers of the evil one, but to focus instead on the omnipotence of God. And we know that whatsoever painful experiences we may have, God has promised us that, if we truly love Him, those experiences **will work for good**. There is therefore always progress when we focus on Him, believe in Him, and stay in His rest. When one is in His rest, and one experiences difficult circumstances, then these circumstances will work for good. Even those difficult circumstances, even those painful setbacks, work for good for those that love God.

When one only believes in God, one may get a hardening of the heart. One might then say: Now is that a God of love? He brings me into circumstances like these. But if one loves God, one will accept it. For one accepts His word and will say: This too will work for good for me. Whatever setback, it cannot fail. He says: It will work for good, it will bring you closer to Me, and it brings you closer to the goal. For we know: The Lord plans to make us into His temple, His **holy** temple. The Spirit of God wants to make His dwelling place within us, and He makes progress in the growth of that temple, of the "being a temple" for the Lord. He wants us to be prepared. That temple is to consist of our spirit, soul *and* body. He wants to dwell, not only in our body, but in our spirit, soul and body. And our whole life, thus: the soul, must be worked on that we might receive a heavenly soul: not carnally minded anymore, but heavenly minded. And our spirit must be submerged completely in the Spirit of God. All these things, also the setbacks, the difficult and painful experiences; when we love Him then these will only bring us closer to the mark (destination). So, we always win! If we have Jesus, and focus on Him, we will always win. Satan may do whatever he wants, he will add to our perfection! Against his will he co-operates. He co-operates that we come closer to God, and closer to the purpose of the perfect temple, the holy temple, wherein God will dwell, wants to dwell. And in the end-times He will dwell **with great power**, with His omnipotence (Ephesians 3:19 b). Satan will then no more be found in that heaven (here on earth). In that heaven of the Christians, the sincere Christians, He will not be found anymore. There we will experience an absolute holiness. His place will not be found anymore in that heaven. He cannot work there anymore, because the "old life" in the hearts will be crucified 100% by God's Spirit. We will then be 100% dead to sin by His purifying works.

1 Peter 2:24 *"Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, **that we, being dead to sins**, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed."*

Satan will then no longer be able to accuse us before God, as he will have been thrown out. That power of sin will have been thrown out of the sincere Christians' hearts, and he (satan) can no longer accuse. But he will be thrown upon the earth; in other words: The Christians that will not live in that heaven of God; who do not work and do not walk in that heaven of God are to face a difficult time. For the people that do come into this purified heaven will later be the Bride of Christ. It is written that they will be "without spot or wrinkle". They will have been made perfect by God, because satan was driven from their hearts, and even from their thoughts.

But woe to those that are not (delivered). Who, as Christians, still walk in those earthly affairs. Satan will then be able to attack, and he will! For, as is written in Revelation 12 verse 17, he will pursue unto death the remnant of her (the Bride's) seed. He will slaughter them all.

But those that truly walk in God's heaven here on earth, who have been cleansed, he (satan) will not be able to reach anymore, for the Bride of Christ will be taken away into the wilderness, and will be kept safe there.

And neither will he be able to get hold of the 144,000 who will be taken into God's heaven. He cannot reach them. So, when one should die by satan's power, through martyrdom in the end-time, it means that one is not yet ready. Then one's heart is not yet enough purified for heaven, one's heart has not yet been made pure enough by the Spirit of God. He is saved, his spirit is saved, but he will be overcome by satan, killed by him here on earth. And when he is dead, he (satan) will have nothing to fear from him anymore. As then he is not able to witness anymore in the power of the Holy Spirit.

The bible says in Ephesians 6 verse 13: "...having done **all, to stand.**" One will be able to do all that He (God) gives to do in this end-time. Therefore it is necessary that that heaven of our heart and thinking be purified in this great war of God. The word of God is also as hard as nails in this respect, as is written in John 3 verse 36:

"He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him."

What use then is a religious life, a Christian life, if one wants to remain living in sin. One must be freed from sin. One must be delivered from sin. Sin should not reign in one. We must share **the death and resurrection** of Jesus, completely. We must become one planting with Him in His death, then we will also be one planting with Him in His resurrection. We must be willing to die to all power of sin: in our sinful thinking, in our sinful desiring and in our sinful heart. We must immediately put everything under His blood, immediately throw out everything, not want any part of it, not allow satan any access into our inward nor our outward person, we must be ready to fight satan. We must also tell others that they will discover what it is they should guard against.

Most of the time sinful thinking is not recognised (as such). Some people say: That is nothing, I only thought it, I did not do anything. But when one already is thinking it, one has already sinned before God. This is why we must banish satan from our thoughts. He should not be allowed to enter in.

Circumstances, again, no matter how bad they might be, when one loves God, they will work together for good. It is God's promise. They will bring us closer to the Lord.

So, it is war! God can then come in and dwell in our heart if we are completely cleansed. God then comes and makes His dwellingplace within us **in all His power**. He comes to dwell **in all His omnipotence**, with all those great gifts of the almighty Spirit of God. In the end-time this God's indwelling will take place **in all its fullness**. Could you imagine? But then the temple must first be cleansed 100%. God does not wish to live and work in a temple that is in any way stained. It is written: I live in heaven, in holiness.

So it is with a heart that is broken: it is written, that He only wishes to live in it in order to **heal** that heart. If we regret our wrong, and repent, He will come and dwell in our heart in order **to heal it**. He will not do so, if we are a repentant sinner, and then remain a repentant sinner. No, we must be healed of our sinning. He wants to heal us, and we must completely submit to Him and partake of Calvary. Completely! Then He will be able to reveal these great powers in us. It is written also in Habakkuk 2 verse 20:

*"But the Lord is in his **holy** temple: let all the earth keep silence before him."*

This is the situation during the great revival just before the great tribulation, also verse 14 in Habakkuk 2 points to this:

"For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea."

This text does not refer to the Millennium, but to the time before the great tribulation during the great revival. Everybody will then know the will of the Lord by the great forces, that will take place, because God dwells in His holy temple. That holy temple is the Bride of Christ. She has been made holy and the power lives within her in all fullness: God's omnipotence. He reveals Himself through her in His omnipotence. Habakkuk 3 is written in the light of the salvation of His people and the judgments that will take place simultaneously if one does not want Him, if one resists Him. For there will be great judgments on earth; as Matthew 24 says: Wars and rumors of wars; pestilences, persecutions, etc. All these things will come in the end-times. While God sanctifies and saves His Church there will be darkness on earth. That is exactly what Isaiah 60 verse 2 says:

"For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the Lord shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee."

Light with the people of God. Glory of God. Glory of the Lord, of God Almighty, in our midst. But on earth, around us: darkness and troubles.

Matthew 25 says the same: *the Bridegroom comes **at midnight!*** When it is the darkness of midnight. So, the earth will be full of troubles, wars, economic decline, political powers that clash, and also social decadence. Everything will fall apart, and gets in a chaotic and hectic situation. Then will come the Bridegroom; and after the marriage the great revival that will shake the whole world, move it. It is then that the Spirit of God will be **poured out**, as it is written. We read this in Joel, and also in Acts 2. *"In the last days"*, says God. And Peter thought he was in the last days. That is why he said: it is better not to marry, for the Lord will come soon. Be like me, stay single, for the Lord will come soon. There even were people that laid down their work, and only waited for the Lord, and the Lord had to rebuke them: *"Do not do that, keep on working"*. That is because Paul had said He was to come soon. And they

thought: O well, if He comes soon, we will not do anything anymore, we will only pray, and only sing, honor and praise, and wait for His coming", but it is wrong.

The reason was that he himself had given the impulse, namely that the Lord was to come soon. But it will only be in the end-time. This text is meant for the end-time, then the Spirit will be **poured out** with great force. Not drop for drop, but He will reveal Himself in great power. That will be a tremendous spiritual rain. Tremendous powers are about to infiltrate the Body of Christ in order to bring about those great manifestations such as the world has never, never before seen. Cerullo says (and he has many gifts): Whatever is seen with us now, works of this time, are nothing compared to what will come, what will happen, what will be revealed to the world. The majestic, wonderful revelations of power! And not by one person, but by the Church of the saints. For the promise is: The end-time Church will be much greater than the church in the beginning. That is something great, and it is about to happen. But preceding that is a sanctification, that war of Jesus. He must remove from one's thinking all sin and all wrong. One must be purified. Only then He can make His home in His temple. Malachi 3, verses 1-3, says the same: *Suddenly He comes, that Lord. Suddenly He comes with great power.* And Cerullo said: It is as if one walks, and sudden He comes upon one from behind, and takes possession of one. And suddenly one finds oneself in the great powers of God. That is marvellous, isn't it?

If one stays in one's upper room in the spirit, one will expect Him every day, one will expect Him (more and more! Lord, when?) and one will open one's being. One submits completely, and suddenly there it is with great power, with majestic power. And then not only one or two, but the whole Bride Church will be used. Even the smallest, the Dutch bible speaks (in Joel 2 verse 29) of servants and handmaids, but the original translation speaks of slaves and slave girls; the least of the Bride of Christ. They, too, will be clothed with great power. It will be a tremendously wonderful time. Praise His Name! We call it the end-time Feast of Tabernacles (Succoth). In Israel this is the Feast of the last harvest. Then the end-time harvest will be brought in.

In fact Pentecost is the wrong word for us, for Pentecost is the feast of the firstlings, the first principles, the first feast, the beginning of the harvest. The firstlings will be brought in at Pentecost. But we actually now do not live at Pentecost anymore, but we live in the Feast of Tabernacles of the Lord. Again, Pentecost is the first harvest, and we are in the last harvest, the end-time harvest. We are to be prepared for that, we must be formed into the Bride of the Lamb whereby the "man child" is the greatest among all.

The end-time ministry of the chosen of the repentant Israel.

Do we know why he is called the "man child"? He is not a baby son, but a man child. When he has distinguished himself from the Body of the Bride, he has the body of a man, not of a baby. Hence, "man child", in the male fullness of Christ. They are the greatest of the end-time, the firstborn of God, the 144,000 coming from Israel, out of all twelve tribes except Dan's. Thus God was able to find among them those with the mentality saying: "Lord, do with me as you wish, anything is all right". And doing this not merely with their mouth, but especially with their heart. These could be men as well as women, for in Christ there is neither man nor woman. But they are virgins says Revelation 14 verse 4, *they are celibate*, meaning: They are not committed to a denomination. A Church in the bible is often depicted as a woman. So, they are not committed to a denomination, they do not commit themselves.

For instance, some people work for the Church of God only, and all the rest does not interest them, the others are not good and they are not interested in them. If they grow, it is a good thing. If the other one grows, it is not good in their vision, as they themselves (only their group) must grow. For example: when one belongs to the "Norwegian Brothers", one wishes that this group grows, and are indifferent to growth in the Reformed Church, the Assemblies of God, or any other church, as long as they grow it is all right. This is a denominational attitude. And it is sinful. Hence the Lord says: *"They are not defiled with women, they are virgins"* (Revelation 14:4). For a marriage is not unclean, the matrimonial act is not unclean, for God Himself introduced these. But they are defiled by denominational thoughts, by denominational preferences, not looking to the entire Body of Christ. This is sinful; because of this they deny the others.

But the 144,000 "firstborn" will be the greatest in the Kingdom of God. The others still have to grow into this position, but they will not achieve it in this earthly life. The others must all also grow towards that position, for we must all come before the throne of God, in the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ (Ephesians 4:13). We must all come to the status of sitting in the throne of God, for it is written:

Revelation 3:21 "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne."

The great end-time anointing is for the salvation of the world.

This end-time has a period of great anointings, and we must discover this and see it clearly. There will be a tremendous revival, whereby the whole world must be brought under the Word. For He cannot return, unless **everyone** in the world has heard the Gospel. Matthew 24 verse 14 says: *It is only when the Gospel of the Kingdom has been preached to all nations and all tongues that He will return, and then the end will be.*

Joel says: *"He will pour out His Spirit over all flesh"*; i.e. each individual will have to chose for or against Jesus! He cannot return if that has not yet happened. Now, to half of the world's population the Name of Jesus has not once been mentioned. They have not once heard the Name of Jesus. Therefore to that half the Gospel still needs to be preached. They must still have to decide whether or not to accept Jesus. This will happen by the great powers that will take place then. Praise the Name of Jesus!

So, we will have a wonderful, great revival in this end-time. And the testimony, the light of the end-time world will reveal itself in God's majestic, wonderful powers as never before. A great light shall be seen. This is also mentioned in Isaiah 9 verse 1. In the end-time this great light shall be revealed, namely the Morningstar. In nature the morningstar precedes the dawn. When the morningstar is seen, it means: Morning is near, morning will break through soon. The Morningstar is He, Jesus, and He says: "I shall give you the Morningstar", the full power of the Holy Spirit, here on earth. Having received the Morningstar therefore means **participating** in that great revival and being a part of that great revival. Not an onlooker, but **a participant**. Then that Morningstar will shine through one; in other words, One will be in that enormous power. *The glory of the Lord shall be seen upon one* (Isaiah 60:2). These texts all refer to the same thing.

These things will happen, and we are to wait for it. We are to submit ourselves for that purpose, live for it, be in that great expectation. For, if one does not hope for it, one will not receive, just remember that! We must expect it, and believe that He will do this for us! When one does not believe, one will not expect! When one does not believe, one might say: "O well, we'll see; if that revival is here that is great!" But if one believes, one will wait for it, and then one will expect it, and say: "When Lord?" One might, so to speak, sit on the edge of the chair. "When Lord?" One wants to participate. This is what the Lord asks of one: Submission and expectation.

Let us go to Habakkuk 2 verse 3:

*"For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but **at the end it shall speak**, and not lie: **though it tarry, wait for it**; because it will surely come, it will not tarry."*

"It will surely come at the end", in other words: In the end-time this will be revealed. Though it tarry, wait for it. If He tarries, wait for Him, expect Him. For He shall surely come, He shall not stay away, in other words, one will not wait in vain.

Glory for Jesus!

Amen.

The end of part 2

The sermon of the Lord Jesus Christ on the mount:

Part 3

The 10 fulfilled (perfect) laws of the kingdom of heaven on earth (the Church) given by our Lord Jesus Christ.

(Matthew 5:17 – 7:29)

1.

Introductory word

When a Christian deals about God's 10 commandments, he mostly means the 10 commandments, which Moses received from God in the old covenant. Often one has no insight in the 10 **fulfilled (perfect) commandments, which our Lord Jesus Christ has given us** in His **sermon on the mount**. Therefore we need to study accurately these commandments, which our Lord has given us.

It is impossible to fulfill these 10 commandments in our human power and will.

These 10 commandments of our Lord Jesus show us in what things we fail. But if we confess these shortcomings, they will be forgiven us. Then we wash our conscience in the dear Blood of God's Lamb, and we are washed in His blood by Him also. We are not yet able to achieve these commandments of our Lord without sinning against them, because we are not yet made perfect. Even the Mosaic 10 commandments we can't achieve in our unperfected state. Don't mourn therefore, if you are not able to keep these fulfilled (perfect) laws of our Lord. Our shortcomings only prove our unperfected state in Christ Jesus. This perfect state, however, is a state, which He demands, therefore **He** will bring us in this perfect state.

Mt. 5:48 *Be ye therefore **perfect**, even as your Father Which is in heaven is perfect.*

These 10 commandments (laws) of Jesus have a core, which we can find in

Mt. 22:37-40 *Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38 This is the first and great commandment. 39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 40 **On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.***

So we have to **love God above** all, even above our own life, and **love our neighbour as our self**.

It is possible for us to be nice and kind, but not doing so **cordially**. Our human nature has to die. Only then the Lord will build in us His Divine nature. This Divine nature does **not** come before the Lord has burned away our old, sinful nature.

In the biological nature we have a perfect example in the development of a caterpillar into a butterfly. If the caterpillar wants to be a butterfly, he has to surrender himself in a process of dying in order to come in the state of a butterfly. The same we have in the spiritual world. The Divine life does not come before we have brought our sinful, human life, in the power of the Spirit of God, into death, by sharing the death of God's Lamb. The old sinful man in us wants to be cherished and be served. If not, we may come to hatred. By God's grace we have to be borne again out of God, and become mature in this Divine state.

Many Christians think they already have this love of God (in Greek: agapè), but they still have their human love (in Greek: philio), because they are not yet born again out of God, or because their process of – being born again – is not yet grown to maturity. For this being born again and its growth we have to share the process of dying, which the Lord wants to give us, if we are willing to grow into His death.

Rom. 6:5 *For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection*

Such a organic unity we get, if we **spiritually eat and drink His flesh and blood**.

John 6:54-58 *Whoso (spiritually) eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. 56 He that*

(spiritually) eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father hath sent Me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth Me, even he shall live by Me. 58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.

This is a slowly working process, if we have surrendered ourselves in His hands and remain therein.

This perfect 10 commandments (laws) begin with our love for our neighbour. It is amazing, that the Lord doesn't begin with our love for God, but with our love for our neighbour.

We can easily say, that we love God, but if we don't love our brother and sister, this love for God is idle.

1 John 4:20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?

When we realise this in our own being, we know, that this new Divine nature has not yet developed in us. But if we want to be disciples of Jesus, then we follow Jesus on **His way of the cross**, sharing His death and resurrection, and we will do so persistently. So we will taste His new Divine Nature. This is, what Jesus demands from a perfect disciple of Him.

John 13:34-35 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye (accept My offer of My) love (for) one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all [men] know that ye are my disciples (believers who follow Me on the way of the cross), if ye have love one to another.

These 10 commandments (laws) our Lord wants to build in us by and through His Spirit.

*2 Petr. 1:3-4 According as His divine power hath given unto us **all things** that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4 Whereby are given unto us **exceeding great and precious promises**: that by these ye might be **partakers of the divine nature**, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*

Perhaps we die bodily, when we still walk on this way of the cross, **then the rest of the way of the cross God will be put on our account.**

Our justification happens by faith in the Word of Truth, by the power of the Spirit of truth. The perfection in His Word and Spirit is the finish of the way, we have to go. This perfect love of God in our heart is the bond of our perfection.

Col. 3:14 And above all these things put on charity [literal transl.: (divine) love], which is the bond of perfectness.

When this love of God in reality becomes mature in us, so we are able to love even our human enemies. **The Lord Jesus makes His Word real in us, step by step**, by building His Word in us, **step by step**.

2.

Schematic composition

of the 10 fulfilled (perfect) laws of the kingdom of heaven on earth (the Church)
given by our Lord Jesus Christ,

based on Mt. 5:17 – Mt. 7:29 and Mt. 22:37-39

1	<p style="color: purple; font-weight: bold;">Love your neighbour as yourself</p> <p>(Matth.5:20-48; Matth.22:39)</p>	<p>1st law</p> <p>Love your brother/sister with the love of Jesus by opening your heart for Him, so God can build His love in your heart.</p>
2		<p>2nd law</p> <p>Love your partner of your Christian marriage with the love of Jesus by opening your heart for Him, so God can build His love in your heart.</p>
3		<p>3rd law</p> <p>Love your neighbour as yourself by opening your heart for Jesus, so God can build this love in your heart.</p>
4		<p>4th law</p> <p>Love your enemy with the love of God by opening your heart for Jesus, so God can build this love in your heart.</p>
5	<p style="color: purple; font-weight: bold;">Love God above all, even above your own life and all your possessions</p> <p>(Mt. 6:1 – 7:29; Mt.22:37-38)</p>	<p>5th law</p> <p>Love God above all by opening your heart for His financial-anointing, so God can build in your heart the leading of the Spirit, regarding your financial sacrifices.</p>
6		<p>6th law</p> <p>Love God above all by opening your heart for His prayer-anointing, so God can build in your heart the leading of the Spirit in your prayer-life.</p>
7		<p>7th law</p> <p>Love God above all by opening your heart for His fast-anointing, so God can build in your heart the leading of the Spirit, regarding your fast-sacrifices.</p>
8		<p>8th law</p> <p>Show your love for God above all by <i>mortifying</i> (Col.3:5, killing) your sinful bodily, worldly hunger for wealth and luxuriance, for lusts of the flesh through opening your heart for Jesus, so He is able to share you His death and resurrection.</p>
9		<p>9th law</p> <p>Show your love for God above all by <i>mortifying</i> (Col.3:5, killing) your sinful social life, your sinful relations between you and your neighbour through opening your heart for Jesus, so He is able to share you His death and resurrection.</p>
10		<p>10th law</p> <p>Show your love for God above all by <i>mortifying</i> (Col.3:5, killing) in you all human efforts in your spiritual labour for the Lord through opening your heart for Jesus, so He is able to share you His death and resurrection.</p>

3.

Further introductory words

The Sabbath day

You may wonder, that in these fulfilled laws of our Lord Jesus any commandment regarding the Sabbath day is absent. The keeping of **the day** of the Sabbath turned to be **a shadow of the spiritual things, which have been come in the time of the new covenant**. The spiritual truth of it God could not yet teach in the time of the old covenant. This matter also concerns in regard with the spice laws, and the change of the Sabbath day into the Sunday in the Christian churches.

Col. 2:16-17 *Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: 17 Which are a **shadow of things to come**; but the body is of Christ.*

The **spiritual truth** regarding the Sabbath **remains**, namely: we **always** have to keep **the Sabbath-rest in God**, which may not be disturbed by sin. We have to live in this rest of Christ, which the Holy Spirit will build in us. We personally have to co-operate with the Lord to remain in this spiritual rest. So we have to rest positively in the new creation of Christ. Again, this don't happen automatically, but with our benevolent co-operation and fleeing from satan's misleading offers. We have to walk in positive faith, proceeding on the way of the cross. The goal of this way is freedom from sin, which we have to achieve persistently.

Again, for these 10 laws of the Kingdom of heaven on earth the disciple of Jesus have to open his heart for the Lord. So by the power of His Spirit He is able **to build them in**, step by step, in our heart and life.

The Kingdom of God begins invisible, deep in our heart.

Luk. 17:20-21 *And when He was demanded of the Pharisees, when the Kingdom of God should come, He answered them and said, The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation: 21 Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, **the Kingdom of God is within you.***

Our Lord Jesus Christ is through His Spirit the Begin and the Finish of this spiritual Kingdom in our heart and life. This labour of Him begins after our conversion and confession of our sins. Then He gives us redemption of our old sinful nature and does us be born again out of God. This all is possible, because of His sacrifice at Golgotha.

The sevenfold assignment of the labour of God's Lamb, achieved at Golgotha, in order to build this labour in us, in our born again souls.

1. He baptises us in His Spirit of sanctification and purifying Fire.

Mt. 3:11-12 *I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire: 12 Whose fan is in His hand, and He will throughly purge His floor (picture of your heart), and gather His wheat (the repented souls won for His Kingdom) into the garner; but He will burn up the chaff (the sinful life of the repented soul) with unquenchable fire.*

2. He burns away the old sinful man in us, and build in us the new man in the Nature of Christ, who, when becoming mature, does live us according to all 10 laws of the New Testament.

Rom. 3:21-22 *But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; 22 Even the righteousness of God **which is by faith of Jesus Christ** unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:*

3. He strengthens us against satan's temptations, till the sanctification in our body, soul and spirit is achieved.

Eph. 3:16 *That He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might by His Spirit **in the inner man***

Eph. 6:10 *Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might.*

1 Th. 5:23 *And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and [I pray God] your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

4. He is the Stream of living Waters, the Divine Life, which, out of Christ Jesus and the Father, flows in us and through us towards others.

Jn. 7:37-39 *In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto Me, and drink. 38 He that believeth on Me, as the scripture hath said, out of His belly shall flow rivers of living water. 39 (But this spake He of the Spirit, which they that believe on Him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)*

5. By His Holy Spirit, He gives us power and might over satan, so that we are able to bring our witness of the Lord, His life giving Word, to others.

Acts 1:8 *But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*

6. He clothes us and fills us with His glory.

Zech. 2:5 *For I, saith the LORD, will be unto her a Wall of fire round about, and will be the Glory in the midst of her.*

7. He leads us in His perfect Divine love, up to its maturity, already here on earth.

Eph. 4:13 *Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a **perfect man**, unto **the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ**:*

The beginning verses, which introduce these 10 commandments (laws).

Let us now go to the beginning verses of Jesus' sermon of the mount, which introduce these 10 laws.

Mt. 5:17-18 *Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but **to fulfil**. 18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.*

God's laws are **not** destroyed in the period of the Kingdom of heaven on earth, the period of the Church, of the New Covenant, in regard of men, living in their sinful nature. What Jesus is giving here is the **fulfilling**, the **perfection** of God's laws, for men who are willing to live in the salvation bringing grace of Jesus, which He wants to give to conversed souls, who have themselves surrendered to Him.

Matth. 5:19 *Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the Kingdom of heaven.*

Preachers, who **don't** teach sanctification by the working of God's Word and Spirit shall be called **the least in the Kingdom of heaven**. But whosoever shall do and teach them, shall be called **great in the Kingdom of heaven**.

This 10-fold law of God has been founded on and built in the **love** and the **glory** of God, and knows in the life of the conversed sinner a twofold working:

1. A **death-working** in the old, sinful man.
Rom. 8:2 *For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me **free from the law of sin and death**.*
2. A being **born again out of God** and growth up to maturity of the new Divine Nature of God.
Titus 3:4-5 *But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, 5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost.*

4.

The 1st law

Love your brother and sister with the love of Christ Jesus

1. We must not do righteousness in human power, but always act in the power of the Lord.

Matth. 5:20 *For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of heaven.*

The Pharisees and scribes love their neighbour in their own power, but we have to **be lovely and nice, after the Lord has brought us in His Divine love**. He has to pour His love into our heart, build His love in our heart. We have to pray for this!

Rom. 5:5 *And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.*

2. We must not kill each other.

Mt.: 5:21 *Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgement:*

With "not kill each other" God means "not murder each other", for David was taught by the Lord how to wage war against his enemies.

Ps. 144:1 *Blessed be the LORD my strength, Which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight:*

Also Jesus didn't compell the centurion to quit the army, as John the baptist didn't compell the soldiers, who came to him, to do so.

Mt. 8:5-13 And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto Him a centurion, beseeching Him, 6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented. 7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him. 8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that Thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed. 9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. 10 When Jesus heard it, He marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. 11 And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the Kingdom of heaven. 12 But the children of the Kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour.

3. We have to let the Lord build His love in our heart.

We have to build by the Lord this commandment in our heart in and through the power of the Holy Spirit. So we are able to love our brother and sister with the love of God.

Jn. 13:34-35 A new commandment I give unto you (His commandment to accept His offer of divine love), That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples (My followers on the way of the cross), if ye have love one to another.

Rom. 8:2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

It is the Spirit of God, Who through His Word and power, redeems us from the old, sinful, self-centred man. Then He builds in us, after our conversion and confession of our sins, the new creation, a creation in the likeness of God.

4. We must not have evil thoughts about our brothers and sisters.

Matth. 5:22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca (of Aramaic origin; empty, i.e. a senseless, empty headed man), shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

It is sinful to have evil thoughts about our brother and sister on the base of suspicions or slander, and react on this base evilly against them. Let us not have evil thoughts, but have a merciful heart.

5. Also talking scandals about our brother and sister in Christ is sin, so putting him/her down, and abusing him/her is punishable with God.

Jas. 3:1-16 My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation. 2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body. 3 Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body. 4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth. 5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth! 6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell. 7 For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind: 8 But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. 9 Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God. 10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be. 11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? 12 Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh. 13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom. 14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. 15 This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. 16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.

Mt. 12:36-37 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. 37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

Prov. 4:23-24 Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life. 24 Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee.

Ps. 57:4 My soul is among lions: and I lie even among them that are set on fire, even the sons of men, whose teeth are spears and arrows, and their tongue a sharp sword.

Ps. 5:9 For there is no faithfulness in their mouth; their inward part is very wickedness; their throat is an open sepulchre; they flatter with their tongue.

Rom. 3:13-14 Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: 14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness

Such people are instruments of the devil, who inspires them to such sinful language and actions, and so defile their inward man of the heart, why their outward man comes to sinful language and actions.

Gen. 6:5 And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

Mt. 15:18-19 But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. 19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies

6. Let us quickly come to peace with our brother an sister in Christ.

Let us sincerely surge for this peace. If the other party doesn't want to do so, then with God we are liberated of this pressure. Don't we do so, then God may call us to responsibility already in this life.

Mt. 5:23-26 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

7. We have to forgive them, who did evil against us. If we don't do so, we blockade our own salvation.

Mk. 11:25-26 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

Let us take to heart the following Word of God in our contacts with our brothers an sisters in Christ.

Rom. 12:16-19 Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. 17 Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. 18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men. 19 Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is Mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.

5. The 2nd law

Love your wife/husband with the love of Christ.

The institution, which a Christian must have in regard with sexuality and marriage.

Sex is a by God given bodily power for multiplication of mankind, and its nature is therefore **pure** and **undefiled**, if executed within the borders, given by God in His Word.

Hebr. 13:4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

God condemns adultery and sex with changing partners.

Rev. 21:8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and **whoremongers**, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

Rev. 22:15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and **whoremongers**, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

1 Cor. 7:1-9 Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman. 2 Nevertheless, **to avoid fornication**, let every man have his **own** wife, and let every woman have her **own** husband. 3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband. 4 The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife. 5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency. 6 But I speak this by permission, and not of commandment. 7 For I would that all men were even as I myself. But every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that. 8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I. 9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

Adultery and fornication begins with **seeing** and **coveting**.

Mt. 5:27-32 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28 But I say unto you, **That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after** her hath committed adultery with her already **in his heart**. 29 And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it (spiritually) out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it (spiritually) off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 31 It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: 32 But I say unto you, **That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication**, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.

Who covets an adulterant woman has, according to this perfect law, spiritually already done adultery with her. Sinful sex begins with the **eye**. Then you go to that person (**the feet**), and at last **you achieve sex**, which **begins with the hands**.

Mark. 9:43-48 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it (spiritually) off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: 44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. 45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it (spiritually) off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: 46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. 47 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it (spiritually) out: it is better for thee to enter into the Kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: 48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

Unholy sex.

Sex has the tendency to **idolatry**, the worship of the false god **Venus**. This is unholy. This is the case, when sex **fills our heart**, taking so the place, which we have to give to **Jesus alone**. So it is the case when everything else than Jesus fills your heart, that thing or thought forms than an idol for you.

Let us look further in the Scriptures regarding unholy sex.

Rom. 1:22-32 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, 23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. 24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: 25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. 26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: **for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: 27 And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet** (the illness of aids). 28 And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; 29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, 30 Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, 31 Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: 32 Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

Lev. 18:22-24 Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is **abomination**. 23 Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast to lie down thereto: it is confusion. 24 Defile not ye yourselves in any of these things: for in all these the nations are defiled which I cast out before you:

The Christian marriage.

Lovers, when they have their marriage closed before God, conform the Word of God, have promised each other **faithfulness** till the death separate them from each other. During their marriage they have kept themselves open for the Lord, so He is able to pour His love (in Greek: agape) for each other in their hearts.

Let us study God's will regarding marriage-life in His Word.

Eph. 5:22-33 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. 23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. 24 Therefore as the Church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be **to their own husbands** in every thing. 25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it; 26 That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word, 27 That He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, **not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish**. 28 So ought men to love their (own) wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his (own) wife loveth himself. 29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the Church: 30 For we are members of His Body, of His flesh, and of His bones. 31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. 32 This is a great mystery: but I

speaking concerning Christ and the Church. 33 Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

We find also God's will regarding Christian marriage-partners in

1 Pet. 3:1-7 Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your **own husbands**; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; 2 While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear. 3 Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; 4 But let it be (especially) the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. 5 For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: 6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement. 7 Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; **that your prayers be not hindered.**

No divorce in the Christian marriage-life.

A marriage closed before the face of God may not come to divorce, **except in the case of fornication or adultery.** In this case **the faithfulness in the marriage-life has been broken** by the guilty partner (Mt. 5:32). **In such case** the not-guilty partner **may divorce** or reconcile with the guilty partner. If the not-guilty partner choose for a divorce, **then he/she may marry again, but only "in the Lord"**.

If a marriage-union cannot be maintained for one or an other reason (not by fornication or adultery), then the marriage partners may divorce, **but have to remain unmarried** till the other partner has died.

1 Cor. 7:10-11 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband: 11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

No unequal yoke in the Christian marriage.

Someone believing in the Lord Jesus Christ doesn't have to marry an unbelieving person, nor someone out of another religion.

2 Cor. 6:14-18 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? 15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? 16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell **in** them, and walk **in** them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. 17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and **touch not the unclean thing**; and I will receive you, 18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

If we are already married and then convert to Christianity, then Paul, **not the Lord**, has the following advise:

1 Cor. 7:12-16 Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you. 13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort: yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all. 14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting, which I made before Titus, is found a truth. 15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembereth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling ye received him. 16 I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

6.

The 3rd law

Don't cheat your neighbour, love him/her as yourself.

Mt. 5:33-37 Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: 34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: 35 Nor by the earth; for it is His footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. 36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. 37 But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

So don't say; Yes, **but!**

We now begin to look at the relationship with **the neighbour in general sense**, by with we have to love that neighbour **as ourself**.

Mt. 22:39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

Speak with your neighbour always the truth.

Don't cheat your neighbour, as is common to people in the unconverted world. Towards the neighbour we have to behave as children of truth, for we have to be led by **the Spirit of truth**.

*Jn. 14:15-17 If ye love me, keep My commandments. 16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you **for ever**; 17 Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.*

Also **the lie for your good** we have to avoid. If we are in that case, we have to pray the Lord for wisdom. Further Scripture says **not to swear**, and not to take an oath. Your **promesse** then will be the same as an oath. We therefore have to act as we have promised. Let us herefore open our heart for the Lord, so He is able to build this Word in our heart. The world has to be sure of the word of God's children.

Let us study an other Bibleverse about this matter.

Rom. 3:4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

Satan is the father of lies.

*Jn. 8:44 Ye (the Pharisees and sinful scribes) are **of your father the devil**, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.*

*1 Jn. 5:19 And we know that we are of God, and **the whole world lieth in wickedness**.*

Whole the world listens to him, and follows him, wile we have to take care not to be cheated by him.

Ps. 5:9 For [there is] no faithfulness in their mouth; their inward part [is] very wickedness; their throat [is] an open sepulchre; they flatter with their tongue.

*1 Jn. 5:20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know **Him that is true, and we are in Him that is true**, even in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.*

So we have to put off each form of lie.

Eph. 4:25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

Zech. 8:16 These are the things that ye shall do; Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbour; execute the judgement of truth and peace in your gates

Col. 3:9-10 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; 10 And have put on the new [man], which is renewed in knowledge after the image of Him that created him

1 Pet. 2:1 Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings

Ps. 5:6 Thou shalt destroy them that speak leasing: the LORD will abhor the bloody and deceitful man.

However your truth must not be killing.

Your words have to bring peace. So speak therefore with wisdom. Don't embitter your neighbour with words. Don't give judgements against your neighbour. We go deeper in this matter, when we study the 9th law.

Let us banish each form of slander and gossip out of our life.

We are able to do so by opening our heart for the Lord of grace and truth. Don' keep your ears open for slander and gossip. If you do so, you are equally guilty.

John 1:14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the Only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

I will bring to your attention, that the word grace proceed the word truth. Let this also be found in our speak with others. Let us be careful with all our talk, for we are responsible for it with God!

Mt. 12:36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

Ask the Lord to forgive you and redeem you from all idle words.

7. The 4th law

Love your enemies with the love of God.

The Lord offers us to build in us His love for the whole mankind, even for them, who have exercised enmity towards us.

1. The law of God out of the old covenant.

The Mosaic law teaches Israel to revenge on the enemy.

Mt. 5:38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth

Ex. 21:22-25 If men strive, and hurt a woman with child, so that her fruit depart [from her], and yet no mischief follow: he shall be surely punished, according as the woman's husband will lay upon him; and he shall pay as the judges [determine]. 23 And if [any] mischief follow, then thou shalt give life for life, 24 Eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, 25 Burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe.

2. God's law in the new covenant.

In the new covenant He offers us His Divine love, which He wants to build in us and for which we have to keep us open for.

Mt. 5:39-42 But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. 40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also. 41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. 42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

Verse 39 is towards the violence of the enemy.

Verse 40 is towards his rapacity.

Verse 41 is towards his tyranny.

Verse 42 is towards his greed, by which they keep, what they have borrowed.

Mt. 5:43-44 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;

We are able to love our enemy not before the Lord has poured His love in our heart.

*Rom. 5:5 And hope maketh not ashamed; because **the love of God** is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.*

We have to open our heart willingly for His graceful gift.

Let us see how this love for the enemy manifests itself in the heart of Jesus and Stephen.

Lk. 23:34 Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted His raiment, and cast lots.

Acts 7:60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep (he died).

Let us do so with Paul.

1 Cor. 4:12-13 And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it: 13 Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, [and are] the offscouring of all things unto this day.

God teaches us here to love even our enemy, because they themselves are victims of Satan. God wants to save them too.

*1 Tim. 2:3-4 For it is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; 4 Who will have **all men** to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.*

*2 Pet. 3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but **that all should come to repentance.***

Eze. 18:23 Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? saith the Lord GOD: [and] not that he should return from his ways, and live?

Our true enemies are the powers of darkness.

Eph. 6:12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high [places].

3. Perfection is, by the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, possible already here on earth

God will make us perfect, by this He is able to make us His children.

Mt. 5:45-48 *That ye may be the children of your Father Which is in heaven: for He maketh His sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48 **Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.***

He want to build this perfection in us, after He has destroyed our old, sinful man, if we have surrendered ourselves to Him.

Col. 1:27-29 *To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: 28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; **that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus:** 29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to His working, which worketh in me mightily.*

2 Cor. 3:18 *But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the **same image** from glory to glory, [even] as by the Spirit of the Lord.*

2 Cor. 13:11 *Finally, brethren, farewell. **Be perfect**, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.*

Jn. 17:23 *I in them, and Thou in Me, **that they may be made perfect** in One; and that the world may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me.*

Eph. 4:12 *For **the perfecting of the saints**, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:*

2 Tim. 3:17 *That the man of God **may be perfect**, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

Col. 3:14 *And above all these things [put on] charity (divine love), which is the bond of perfectness.*

Hebr. 6:1a *Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, **let us go on unto perfection**; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,*

Hebr. 10:14 *For by one offering **He hath perfected** for ever them that are sanctified.*

Eph. 5:27 *That He might present it to Himself a **glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.***

Jas. 1:4 *But let patience have [her] **perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.***

4. The development to perfection in Christ does not happen automatically.

What do **we** have to do? **We have to co-operate with Him.**

a. We must have faith, that it is possible, that He is able to build this perfection already here on earth.

Mt. 9:29 *Then touched He their eyes, saying, **According to your faith** be it unto you.*

Eph. 3:17-19 ***That Christ may dwell in your hearts** by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what [is] the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled **with all the fullness of God.***

b. For this we have to come to Jesus in prayer.

Matth. 11:28 *Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and **I** will give you rest.*

c. We have to keep His Word, that brings us this message, in our heart.

2 Cor. 4:10-11 *Always bearing about in the body **the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.** 11 For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.*

1 John 2:5 *But whoso keepeth His Word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in Him.*

d. We have to mortify consciously our sinful old man by the power of Jesus.

Rom. 8:13 *For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.*

Col. 3:5 *Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry*

e. We have to participate with the death of Jesus by spiritually eating His flesh, and drinking His Blood.

John 6:56-57 *He that eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father hath sent Me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth Me (spiritually), even he shall live by Me.*

f. We have to escape all temptations of the world and of sin.

2 Cor. 6:17-18 *Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean [thing]; and I will receive you, 18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*

g. We have to sit spiritually continually at the table of the marriage supper of the Lamb, after being called to this spiritual event, in order to perfectly share spiritually His death and resurrection in the end-time.

Rev. 19:9 *And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*

5. This perfection cannot be realised by God's Spirit before the end-time, because God's everlasting Gospel is then preached, without restrictions and misconceptions, in the full power of the Holy Spirit. Moreover then He will pour (the light of) His Spirit upon all flesh. He then will be accepted by many believers.

Rev. 12:1 *And there appeared a great wonder in (the Kingdom of) heaven (on earth, which is the Church); a woman (the Bride of God's Lamb) clothed with the sun (picture of the Father), and the moon (picture of the Son) under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars (picture of the Holy Spirit)*

Rev. 14:6 *And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting Gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people*

Hab. 2:14 *For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.*

Isa. 60:1-3 *Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the LORD is risen upon thee. 2 For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and His glory shall be seen upon thee. 3 And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.*

Isa. 61:10 *I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for He hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, He hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh [himself] with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth [herself] with her jewels.*

Joel 2:23 *Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for He hath given you the former rain moderately, and He will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain (the Holy Spirit, giving divine Life) in the first [month](as in the first outpouring in apostolic time).*

Dan. 2:34-35 *34 Thou sawest till that a stone (the first Christian made perfectly pure) was cut out (from the mount of sin) without hands (without human help), which smote the image upon his feet [that were] of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces. 35 Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them (in the heart of that Christian, who then recognises only Jesus as his King): and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain (picture of the Bride of God'sLamb), and filled the whole earth.*

Dan. 2: 44-45 *And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a Kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the Kingdom shall not be left to other people (but to the people of Israel), [but] it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. 45 Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain (of sin) without (human) hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream [is] certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.*

Here is predicted by Daniel, that in the end-time, in the time of the 10 kings (political leaders), a "stone" (the first perfect member of the Bride of God's Lamb) is **liberated without (human) hands** from the mountain (of sin), namely by the power of God's everlasting Word and by His almighty Spirit. In the heart of this believing soul all sorts of human government will be destroyed, the wind of the Spirit blows them away. He recognises only God's Kingdom. Then rapidly the other members of the Bride of God's Lamb (the big mountain, which shall fill the earth) will follow the pioneer's work of the first one. Then the Kingdom of God will really begin to be manifested on earth (Dan. 2:44).

Now we have treated the first 4 laws of the Kingdom of heaven on earth, the Church of the New Testament.

We have found that God, by His Spirit, will build these 4 laws in our heart and life. To build in of this grace we have to keep our heart and life open. So God's Spirit is able to do so, because we have a free will. The Lord shall never compel us to do so. He will build **His love for the whole mankind** in our heart, up to **the maturity of it**.

8.

The other 6 laws

We consider now the further 6 laws, which the Lord Jesus has given in His sermon on the mount, by which He will redeem us from our old, sinful life, after which He is able to pour in us His Divine love and life. He wants to do this until perfection even during our earthly life,.

With **the 5th law** (Mt. 6:1-4) Jesus want to teach us to open **our soul** for **His financial anointing**, the leading of His Spirit regarding our financial sacrifices. Then we are able to bring our tithes and other financial sacrifices with joy and love, voluntary to God and to the labor of the Church (Mal. 3:7-18).

The 6th law (Mt. 6:5-15) will teach **our spirit** to be open for **His prayer anointing**, the leading of the Spirit regarding our prayer-life. So He is able to pour His love in our heart for God and our fellow men, and the things we have to pray for. We know, that God's love does not come in our heart before He has redeemed us from our sinful nature, by our voluntary sharing His death and resurrection.

The 7th law (Mt. 6:16-18) will teach **our body**, our flesh, and its wants, to be open for **His fast anointing**, the leading of the Spirit regarding our carnal-life on earth. So the Lord is able to lead us into the redemption of our sinful lusts and do us voluntary share His death and resurrection.

The 8th up to the 10th law will teach us, caused by our love for God, to put down our body, soul and spirit, our total sinful being on the alter of burning, so mortifying ourselves by the power of God's Spirit. By this voluntary sharing His death and resurrection, we totally die to our old, sinful flesh, and may share His resurrection life, and things which He has offered us in His Word.

The 8th law (Mt. 6:19-34) will teach us to totally die to **our idolatrous, material, sinful hunger after money and material possessions**. In stead of this all the Lord will give us gracefully heavenly life (heavenly gold), already here on earth.

The 9th law (Mt. 7:1-6) will teach us to totally die to **our sinful relations with our fellow-men**, because of our love for Jesus and our heavenly Father.

The 10th law (Mt. 7:7-29) will teach us to totally die to **our self willed** labour for our Lord Jesus Christ here on earth, which we are doing because of our human love for Him. This law will teach us **only to labour according to His will, and according to our anointing**.

9.

The 5th law

Love God above all by opening your heart for His financial anointing.

God's law regarding our financial sacrifices in the New Covenant with Him.

*Mt. 6:1-4 Take heed that ye do not your alms **before men**, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. 2 Therefore when thou doest [thine] alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have **glory of men**. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. 3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: 4 That thine alms may **be in secret**: and thy Father which seeth in secret Himself shall reward thee openly.*

By giving our financial sacrifices for the labour of God's Church and mission we may not seek honour among men. When we do so, we have no spiritual reward with God. We have not to seek financial profit to regarding our financial sacrifices, although it is written in Gods Word, for our heart may not search for earthly wealth. Let us leave to God, how He will reward us. Give your gift because of **your love for Him**.

Mk. 10:28-31 Then Peter began to say unto Him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed Thee. 29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hats left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the Gospel's, 30 But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions (although we should not hunger for material reward); and in the world to come eternal life. 31 But many [that are] first shall be last; and the last first.

You only are able to give your financial sacrifice because of love, if you have surrendered your life to Him, and after He has poured His love in your heart.

*2 Cor. 8:1-5 Moreover, brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia; 2 How that in a great trial of affliction the abundance of their joy and their deep poverty abounded unto the riches of their liberality. 3 For to their power, I bear record, yea, and beyond their power they were willing of themselves; 4 Praying us with much intreaty that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints. 5 And this they did, not as we hoped, but **first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God**.*

Mt. 25:34-40 Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: 35 For I was an hungred, and ye gave Me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took Me in: 36 Naked, and ye clothed Me: I was sick, and ye visited Me: I was in prison, and ye came unto Me. 37 Then shall the righteous answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungred, and fed Thee? or thirsty, and gave Thee drink? 38 When saw we Thee a stranger, and took Thee in? or naked, and clothed Thee? 39 Or when saw we Thee sick, or in prison, and came unto Thee? 40 And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me.

Mt. 10:42 And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

When you give your financial sacrifice **in an unconverted state to be honoured by men**, then you have no eternal reward with God, how big your sacrifice may be.

1 Cor. 13:3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed [the poor], and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

You have to give your sacrifice out of love for God, and out of mercy for the beneficiary

Mt. 9:13 But go ye and learn what [that] meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

What the Lord asks of us is **our heart**.

Prov. 23:26 My son, give me thine heart, and let thine eyes observe my ways.

The labour for the Lord needs financial sacrifices, but the motive of our giving has to be love for God, and love for the neighbour and his rescue.

Not the size of the sacrifice is grading of our love for Him, but in what measure the sacrifice hurts us.

Mk. 12:41-44 And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. 42 And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. 43 And He called unto Him his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury: 44 For all they did cast in of their abundance; **but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.**

Let us also not seek retaliation from other people, when we give our sacrifice.

Lk. 14:12-14 Then said He also to him that bade Him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor [thy] rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee. 13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: 14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

In the measure, in which one gives, one will be rewarded by God.

Lk. 6:38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.

The law of the financial sacrifice in the Old Covenant.

Mal.3:7-12 Even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from Mine ordinances, and have not kept [them]. Return unto Me, and I will return unto you, saith the LORD of hosts. But ye said, Wherein shall we return? 8 Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed Me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed Thee? In tithes and offerings. 9 Ye [are] cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed Me, [even] this whole nation. 10 Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in Mine house, and prove Me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that [there shall] not [be room] enough [to receive it]. 11 And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field, saith the LORD of hosts. 12 And all nations shall call you blessed: for ye shall be a delightsome land, saith the LORD of hosts.

A tenth part of the income was asked from the believer to cover the costs of the temple, and the costs of living of the priests and levites. Jesus lived under the old-testament laws. He taught about the tithes as follows:

Lk. 11:42 But woe unto you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

Here the Lord teaches us, that we have to sacrifice the tithes of our income to cover the costs of all the labour of the Lord in the Church and the mission-field, because of love for Him.

Some verses more regarding our financial sacrifices.

2 Cor. 9:6-7 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. 7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.

We have to give all our financial sacrifices voluntary and joyfully, also our tithes. The Lord compels nobody. He wants, that we give and serve Him voluntary and out of love. Let us in this matter be lead by the Spirit of God, by His financial anointing. Let us kill all avarice in our heart in the power and the fire of the Holy Spirit.

1 Tim.6:10 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows

10. The 6th law

Love God above all and open your heart for His prayer-anointing.

Mt. 6:5-8 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. 6 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. 7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. 8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask Him.

Our prayers, our contacts with the Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ through the Holy Spirit, have to be absent of honor from men, and have to be hidden. Also is our prayer no question of many words, it may happen in secret within our heart. Further is an attitude not necessary. Hebrew people pray with their arms stretched out up to heaven, the Greek folds up his hands, other people join their hands, and close their eyes. Some people pray laying on the ground.

The model-prayer, which our Lord Jesus has taught us.

1. To Whom we have to pray.

Jesus taught us, that we have to pray to **our Father**, Who is in heaven, to the almighty and only true God, to YaHWeH, Who wants to be our heavenly Father.

Mt. 6:9a After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven

Jn. 16:23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My Name, He will give [it] you.

Not all men have YaHWeH, our almighty God, as their Father.

Rom. 8:14-15 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. 15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

It is the Spirit of God, Who does us **born again** out of God. Then we have God as our heavenly Father.

Jn. 1:12-13 But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His Name: 13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but **of God**.

So, not all believers are children of God, but only they, who are **born again** out of YaHWeH.

Jn. 8:44 Ye are of [your] father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

2 Cor. 6:17-18 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

2. We pray first for the general needs, the needs, which apply to every child of God.

Mt. 6:9b-10 Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be Thy Name. 10 Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.

We utter with the Father firstly our desire about the future of the whole Kingdom of the Lord Jesus Christ on earth of the whole Church of our Lord Jesus Christ; but in the first place, that His Kingdom come **into our heart and life**.

Our prayer to the Father has to be in the first place: **the restoration of God's honor, of His Kingdom, and of His will among men, who are fallen in sin.** In short: the divine answer on the general needs of the **Church of Jesus Christ on earth.**

a. Hollowed be Thy Name.

God's Name is blasphemed on earth by the sin of man, who has been created by Him, especially by them, who say, that they serve Him, that they are His children.

Rom. 2:24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.

So the first prayer and need of God's child is, that this blasphemy is taken away from earth by the redemptive power of God, especially among His children, and more especially out of our own heart and life. His Name be not blasphemed, hut **hallowed by the redemption, sanctification and perfection of His children.**

What is His Name?

*Ex. 3:13-15 And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What is His Name? what shall I say unto them? 14 And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you. 15 And God said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, The LORD God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath sent me unto you: this is My Name **for ever**, and this is My memorial unto all generations.*

Ex. 15:3 YaHWeH is a Man of war, YaHWeH is His Name (literal Hebrew transl.)

The **eternal Name of our Father is YaHWeH (JHWH)**, the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.

Some teach abusively, that the Name of our God is Lord Jesus Christ. This is wrong, for the Name "Jesus", how dear this Name may be to us, is not His **eternal** Name. The Name "Jesus" means "YaHWeH saves". This is not an eternal action of Him, for when the time of grace is over, the Son of God puts the Name "Jesus" down and receives a new Name.

*Rev. 3:12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the Name of My God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from My God: and I will write upon him My **new Name.***

All what concerns with the Name of God we have to sanctify, honor and glorify, so don't use it as an expletive.

Deut. 5:11 Thou shalt not take the Name of the LORD thy God in vain: for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh His Name in vain.

b. Thy Kingdom come, (especially in our own heart and life).

*Rev. 11:15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become [the kingdoms] of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign **for ever and ever.***

In fact Jesus has overcome satan as prince of this world at Golgotha. His kingdom is destroyed.

Then follows the prayer:

c. Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

This prayer is, that God's will, His Word, may march on till it fills the whole world, but in the first place, that God's Word may march on **in our heart and life.**

Hab .2:14 For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

*Mt. 24:14 And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached **in all the world** for a witness unto **all nations; and then shall the end come.***

*Rev. 14:6 And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having **the everlasting Gospel** to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and **to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people***

This eternal Word of God will bring **in the end-time perfect redemption and perfection** to all men, who have been converted. The reason is, **in the end-time** God's **everlasting Gospel** is preached and believed because **the (light of the) Spirit of God then is poured out over all flesh.** By the Lord we then will have built God's Word into us with greater faithfulness, for by His Word we then have a living hope on the eternal splendours, offered by God's prophetic Word. Therefore it is good to study these promises and keep them in our heart.

*Eph. 1:15-23 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, 16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; 17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him: 18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of His calling, and **what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints,** 19 And what is **the exceeding greatness of His power to us-ward** who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, 20 Which He wrought in Christ,*

when He raised Him from the dead, and set Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places, 21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: 22 And hath put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the Church, 23 Which is His body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all.

Eph. 3:8-11 Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles **the unsearchable riches of Christ**; 9 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: 10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the Church the manifold wisdom of God, 11 According to the eternal purpose which He purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord

Eph. 4:11-16 And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12 For **the perfecting of the saints**, for **the work of the ministry**, for **the edifying of the body of Christ**: 13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a **perfect man**, unto **the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ**: 14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

Eph. 2:19-22 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief Corner stone; 21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: 22 In whom ye also are built together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

Eph. 3:16-19 That He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might by His Spirit **in the inner man**; 17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, **that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God**.

Rom. 8:29-30 For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be **the firstborn among many brethren**. 30 Moreover whom He did predestinate, them He also called: and whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified.

Rev. 14:6 And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having **the everlasting Gospel** to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and **to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people**

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass **afterward**, that I will pour out (the light of) My Spirit **upon all flesh** (to enlighten our conscience of sin and the perfect will of God in His Word); and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions

Our prayer to the Father has to concern **the whole body of Christ**, the whole world-wide Church. Therefore we come to Him with the opening words: "our Father".

Eph. 6:18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication **for all saints**

3. The prayers to the Father for answers to our personal needs.

a. The prayers for answers on our personal needs regarding the present.

Mt. 6:11 Give us this day our daily bread.

Our needs of the present doesn't concern only about food for our body, but **also food for our soul and spirit**.

Jn. 6:47-58 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. 48 I am that Bread of life. 49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. 50 This is the Bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may (spiritually) eat thereof, and not die. 51 I am the living Bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this Bread, he shall live for ever: and the Bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. 52 The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this Man give us His flesh to eat? 53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink His blood, ye have no life in you. 54 Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. 56 He that eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father hath sent Me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth Me, even he shall live by Me. 58 This is that Bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this Bread shall live for ever.

a1. In the present we have to follow faithfully **the way of the cross**; the way, which Jesus has opened at Golgotha, and which we have to follow.

Luk. 9:23-25 And He said to them all, If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up **his cross daily**, and follow Me (on My way to Golgotha). 24 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but

whosoever will lose his life for My sake (by partaking spiritually in My death), the same shall save it. 25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

a2. We spiritually have to sit continually at the marriage supper table of the Lamb; in other words: faithfully, continually and spiritually eat His flesh and drink His blood, (so spiritually partaking in His death at Golgotha) for our **perfect** redemption of our old, sinful man.

Rev. 19:9 *And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*

a3. Daily we have to take up (spiritually) our cross and follow Jesus on our cross-way to Golgotha. But first we have to **deny ourselves** (Luke 9:23), we may not yield to our sinful, fleshly desires, but flee from them. This costs an inward struggle, but we have a great Helper, Who has prepared the redemption of our sins at Golgotha. **There He has conquered the powers of sin**, and destroyed them in His flesh. This victory He want to share with us. If we accept this victory, which He offered us – spiritually eating and drinking it, keeping this in our heart, so sharing it spiritually – then by His victory, we self become victors over the powers of sin, which formerly rule over us. We have to do this in faith **continually** and spiritually grow together with it to **one plant**.

2 Cor. 4:10-11 *Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body. 11 For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.*

Rom. 6:5 *For if we have been (spiritually) planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection*

Rom. 6:3 *Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?*

This last mentioned verse applies not only to the baptism in water, but also to the baptism in the Spirit, the Spirit of sanctification and burning.

a4. We have not only wash ourselves in His blood, and purify ourselves in the fire of the Holy Spirit and His Word for our big sins and shortcomings, but for our little sins too, and also for the sinful nature, which we have inherited from our forefathers.

Jas. 3:6 *And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell.*

From every kind of sin, from all what opposes God's Word in us, we have to be redeemed by our Saviour (for which we have to ask Him forgiveness). Jesus has to save us from whole our sinful nature of body, soul and Spirit.

1 John 1:9 *If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*

Rom. 6:12-18 *Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. 15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. 16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? 17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. 18 Being then **made free from sin**, ye became the servants of righteousness.*

Rom. 12:1-3 *I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. 2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. 3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.*

Verse 1 points to the redemption of our sinful body, verse 2 to the redemption of our sinful soul, and verse 3 to the redemption of our sinful spirit, that searches to exalt itself above that, what God has granted to us.

a5. We have to co-operate with Jesus.

Eph. 4:22-32 *That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. 25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. 26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: 27 Neither give place to the devil. 28 Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. 29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers. 30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. 31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away*

from you, with all malice: 32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

a6. We have to share the death of God's Lamb till we have died totally and completely from our sins.

1 Pet. 2:24 Who His own self bare our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by Whose stripes ye were healed. 25 For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

Jn. 8:36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, **ye shall be free indeed.**

a7. We have to co-operate consciously with Jesus and mortify our sinful nature.

Rom. 8:13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Col. 3:5-6 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: 6 For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience

a8. In the power of Jesus we have to bannish the might of sin out of our mind and out of the considerations of our heart.

2 Cor. 10:3-6 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: 4 (For the weapons of our warfare [are] not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) 5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and **bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;** 6 And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, **when your obedience is fulfilled.**

a9. Further we have to be watchful, that the devil can't cheat us.

1 Petr. 5:8-9 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: 9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

b. Our prayers for answers on our personal needs regarding the past.

Mt. 6:12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

Mt. 6:14-15 For **if ye forgive men their trespasses**, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: 15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

The needs regarding the past are sins, which we have to confess, and for which we have to ask forgiveness.

1 Jn. 1:8-10 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. 10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word is not in us.

Jas. 5:16 Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

Prov. 28:13 He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

Our un-confessed sins **form a hindrance** for the progress of our spiritual life, even worse: **the Lord doesn't hear our prayers.**

Isa. 59:1-2 Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither His ear heavy, that it cannot hear: 2 But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid [His] face from you, **that He will not hear.**

We have not only to confess our sins with God and the neighbour against whom we have sinned, but we have to **restore our errors** towards our neighbour, otherwise a curse may rest upon us.

Mt. 5:23-26 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

Also is **irreconcilability** or **unmercifulness** a sin, which we have to confess with the Lord and have to restore in the power of the Lord.

Mk. 11:25-26 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father Which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

Mt. 6:14-15 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: 15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Mt. 18:23-35 Therefore is the Kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. 25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. 26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. 28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. 29 And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. 31 So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: 33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? 34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. 35 So likewise shall My heavenly Father do also unto you, **if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.**

Our sins committed in the past, could be in our mind, in words, and in deeds. Sins committed in our mind we have to confess with God only. The sins committed by words or deeds we have not only to confess with God and ask Him forgiveness for them, but we also have to confess to and ask forgiveness from the neighbour, to whom we have sinned and restore our sin. We have to ask the Lord for wisdom and power for it. Don't take this confess, and asking for forgiveness too light, it may **damage your spiritual development.**

Hebr. 12:1-2 Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us **lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience** the race that is set before us, 2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Mt. 12:36-37 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. 37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

Even unconscious sins we have to put in God's forgiving hands.

Ps. 139:23-24 Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: 24 And see if [there be any] wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

2 Chron. 7:14 If My people, which are called by My name, shall humble themselves, **and pray, and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.**

God will forgive them all and redeem us from these sins, if we confess them with Him.

Isa. 1:18 Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

1 Jn 1:9 Already cited above.

c. Our prayers for answer on our personal needs regarding the future.

Mt. 6:13a. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil

By the power of Jesus and His prayer-anointing we receive power to resist all temptations of the devil. They always exist and will increase in the end-time in all violence. Just as Daniel we have to resist all offers of satan (Dan. 1:8-9). Let us always say "No" against satan and his temptations by the power of our prayer anointing.

Josh. 1:5-9 There shall not any man be able to stand before thee all the days of thy life: as I was with Moses, so I will be with thee: I will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. 6 Be strong and of a good courage: for unto this people shalt thou divide for an inheritance the land, which I swore unto their fathers to give them. 7 Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses My servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest. 8 This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success. 9 Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD thy God is with thee whithersoever thou goest.

2 Cor. 10:3-6 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: 4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) 5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, **and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;** 6 And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, **when your obedience is fulfilled.**

Mt. 11:12 *And from the days of John the Baptist until now the Kingdom of heaven suffereth violence (from satan's attacks), and the violent take it by force.*

The servants of the Lord do in the Church violence to satan's realm. They take the saved sinners by force – by the power of the Holy Spirit – out of satan's hands, and bring them into the Kingdom of God.

Lk. 11:21-22 *When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace: 22 But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.*

"The strong one", who keeps his place is the devil, the "stronger than he" is the servant of God in the power of the Holy Spirit, who destroys satan's power, and brings his spoils, the saved souls, in the Kingdom of God. We have as servant of the Lord, just as Jesus, to wage war against satan and his power (1 Jn. 3:8).

1 Jn. 3:8 *He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He **might destroy the works of the devil.***

Rom. 16:20 *And the God of peace shall bruise satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.*

Col. 4:12 *Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always labouring fervently for you (waging war against satan) in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.*

We have to wage war against satan in our prayers.

Mt. 16:19 *And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of heaven (on earth, that is the Church): and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*

Mt. 16:17-28 *And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for*

The keys of the Kingdom of the Lord are the powers of the Holy Spirit, by which previous closed, spiritual doors are opened.

Lk. 10:19 *Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over **all the power of the enemy**: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.*

Mt. 16:17-28 *And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but My Father Which is in heaven. 18 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock (such a rocky faith as thine) I will build My Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. 19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of heaven (on earth, which is the Church): and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 20 Then charged He His disciples that they should tell no man that He was Jesus the Christ. 21 From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. 22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke Him, saying, Be it far from Thee, Lord: this shall not be unto Thee. 23 But He turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind Me, satan: thou art an offence unto Me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. 24 Then said Jesus unto His disciples, If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me. 25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it. 26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works. 28 Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in His Kingdom.*

Eph. 6:18 *Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication **for all saints***

Col. 4:2 *Continue in prayer, and **watch** in the same with thanksgiving*

1 Pet. 5:8-9 *Be sober, be **vigilant**; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: 9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.*

The iniquity shall abound.

Mt. 24:12 *And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.*

Rev. 22:11 *He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.*

In the time of the anti-christ iniquity shall abound up to its very end.

Eze. 21:25-29 *And thou, profane wicked prince of Israel (the anti-christ is called here "prince of Israel because he claimed to be the returned Christ), whose day is come, when iniquity [shall have] an end (literal transl.: whose day is come in the time of iniquity of the end), 26 Thus saith the Lord GOD; Remove the diadem, and take off the crown: this [shall] not [be] the same: exalt [him that is] low, and abase [him that is] high. 27 I*

will overturn, overturn, overturn, it: and it shall be no [more], until he come whose right it is; and I will give it [him]. 28 And thou, son of man, prophesy and say, Thus saith the Lord GOD concerning the Ammonites, and concerning their reproach; even say thou, The sword, the sword is drawn: for the slaughter it is furbished, to consume because of the glittering: 29 Whiles they see vanity unto thee, whiles they divine a lie unto thee, to bring thee upon the necks of them that are slain, of the wicked, whose day is come, when their iniquity shall have an end.

Therefore Gods servants have to put on **the whole armour of God**. First the **inward** armour of righteous-ness, and then His **outward** armour, the spiritual power against satan's might.

Lk. 10:19 *Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.*

Eph. 6:10-18 *Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. 11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high [places]. 13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. 14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; 15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: 18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints*

Then satan's temptations will not harm us anymore, we are then redeemed of them, because we are then perfectly purified and sanctified down to the deepest of our heart. So He redeems us from the evil one and his cheating activities. Then we have put on our Lord with all His power and glory; namely when the bridal festival has taken place.

Rev. 12:1 *And there appeared a great wonder in (the Kingdom of) heaven (on earth, that is the Church) a woman (the Bride of God's Lamb) clothed with the sun (picture of the Father), and the moon (picture of the Son) under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars (picture of the Holy Spirit)*

4. Adoration, thanksgiving, glorifying and praise.

His prayer anointing brings us on the wings of His Spirit up to the throne of our Father and of the Lamb, to bring our God there thanksgiving, glorifying and praise, up to **adoration** of God.

Mt. 6:13b *For thine is the Kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever.*

Ps. 50:23 *Whoso offereth praise glorifieth Me: and to him that ordereth [his] conversation [aright] will I shew the salvation of God.*

Rev. 7:12 *Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, [be] unto our God for ever and ever.*

Isa. 42:8 and 12 *I am the LORD: that is My Name: and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images. 12 Let them give glory unto the LORD, and declare His praise in the islands.*

Isa. 48:11 *For Mine own sake, [even] for Mine own sake, will I do [it:] for how should [My Name] be polluted? and I will not give My glory unto another.*

11.

The 7th law

Love God above all by opening your body for His fast-anointing.

Mt. 6:16-18 *Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. 17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; 18 That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father Which is in secret: and thy Father, Which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.*

1. The general meaning of fasting.

We spare ourselves of all bodily, sensorial enjoyments, so as fine spice and drinks, sex, view, smell, and feel fine things, etc. in order to be more open for the liberating actions and leading of the Holy Spirit (His fast-anointing). So the love of God (Rom. 5:5), His will and Word can more easily be build in our heart and life, and predominate in us over our fleshly lusts. So the first love can remain in us, and we are able to love Him above all.

When we fast, it has to remain **hidden** between ourselves and the Lord God, and not be visible in our behaviour. Never may our fast have the character of a show, to be praised by men. Also our fast has to be lead and actuated by the Spirit of God, otherwise such a bodily torment is in vain.

Ps. 127:2 *It is vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late, to eat the bread of sorrows: for so He giveth His beloved (in their) sleep.*

Also we never have to fast ordered by men, by church-leaders and on base of teachings based on old-testamental laws or tradition.

Lk. 18:9-14 *And He spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: 10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. 11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men [are], extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. 12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. 13 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. 14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.*

Zech. 7:5-7 *Speak unto all the people of the land, and to the priests, saying, When ye fasted and mourned in the fifth and seventh month, even those seventy years, did ye at all fast unto Me, even to Me? 6 And when ye did eat, and when ye did drink, did not ye eat for yourselves, and drink for yourselves? 7 Should ye not hear the words which the LORD hath cried by the former prophets, when Jerusalem was inhabited and in prosperity, and the cities thereof round about her, when men inhabited the south and the plain?*

2. The aim of our fast must be the breaking and redemption of our sinful nature.

Isa. 58:5-14 *Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? [is it] to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes [under him]? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the LORD? 6 [Is] not this the fast that I have chosen? **to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke?** 7 [Is it] not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? 8 Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the LORD shall be thy reward. 9 Then shalt thou call, and the LORD shall answer; thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I [am]. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; 10 And [if] thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness [be] as the noonday: 11 And the LORD shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. 12 And [they that shall be] of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in. 13 If thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath, [from] doing thy pleasure on My holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honourable; and shalt honour Him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking [thine own] words:*

In the first instance this breaking and redeeming has to happen by the power of the shed Blood of the Lamb, but fasting brings consolidation of our prayer for redemption.

3. We fast to receive God's promise of perfect redemption and purification mentioned in Eph. 5:26-27, in order that we are spotless and without wrinkle, already here on earth.

Eph. 5:26-27 *That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word, 27 That He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, **not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.***

In the first place we receive this redemption and purification by our faith and washing in the shed blood of the Lamb at Golgotha. Fast for this case **emphasises** our prayer for our purification.

Hebr. 9:11-12 and 14 *But Christ being come an High Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; 12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood He entered in once into the holy place, having obtained **eternal redemption** [for us]. 14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?*

Joel 2:12-17 *Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye even to Me with **all your heart**, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: 13 And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your God: for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil. 14 Who knoweth if He will return and repent, and leave a blessing behind Him; even a meat offering and a drink offering unto the LORD your God? 15 Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly: 16 Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. 17 Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep **between the porch and the altar**, and let them say, Spare Thy people, O LORD, and give not Thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God?*

The priests had to weep between the porch and the altar of burnt offering, namely on the place where the laver stood, which is a picture of our ready willingness to share the death of God's Lamb, to be planted together in the likeness of His death (Rom. 6:5). Again: fasting is but an addition to realise the death of our sinful human flesh.

4. The aim of fasting is a more intimate fellowship with the Lamb of God.

This more intimate fellowship brings us up to the state of "**children of the bride-chamber**".

Matth. 9:14-15 Then came to Him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but Thy disciples fast not? 15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber mourn, as long as the Bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the Bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

Jer. 29:13 And ye shall seek Me, and find [Me], when ye shall search for Me with all your heart.

Rev. 3:20 Behold, I stand at the door (of your heart), and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup (the marriage supper of God's Lamb. Rev 19:9) with him, and he with Me.

Rev. 19:9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed [are] they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

Song 5:1-8, 6:1-3 I am come into My garden, My sister, [My] spouse: I have gathered My myrrh with My spice; I have eaten My honeycomb with My honey; I have drunk My wine with My milk: eat, O friends; drink, yea, drink abundantly, O beloved. 2 I sleep, but my heart waketh: [it is] the voice of my Beloved that knocketh, [saying], Open to Me, My sister, My love, My dove, My undefiled: for My head is filled with dew, [and] My locks with the drops of the night. 3 I have put off my coat; how shall I put it on? I have washed my feet; how shall I defile them? 4 My beloved put in His hand by the hole [of the door], and my bowels were moved for Him. 5 I rose up to open to my Beloved; and my hands dropped [with] myrrh, and my fingers [with] sweet smelling myrrh, upon the handles of the lock. 6 I opened to my Beloved; but my Beloved had withdrawn Himself, [and] was gone: my soul failed when He spake: I sought Him, but I could not find Him; I called Him, but He gave me no answer. 7 The watchmen that went about the city found me, they smote me, they wounded me; the keepers of the walls took away my veil from me. 8 I charge you, O daughters of Jerusalem, if ye find my Beloved, that ye tell Him, that I [am] sick of love. 6:1 Whither is thy Beloved gone, O thou fairest among women? whither is thy Beloved turned aside? that we may seek Him with thee. 2 My Beloved is gone down into his garden, to the beds of spices, to feed in the gardens, and to gather lilies. 3 **I [am] my Beloved's, and my Beloved [is] mine: He feedeth among the lilies.**

The intense searching of the Bride after her spiritual slumber is rewarded with a glorious, renewed contact with her Bridegroom.

Php. 3:10-14 That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death; 11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. 12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. 13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 **I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.**

John 17:3 And this is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom Thou hast sent.

5. A further aim of fasting is getting more power and anointing of the Holy Spirit, getting more breakthrough from the Spirit in our earthly labour.

Mt. 17:21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

My personal opinion is that we can't **compel** the Spirit of God. He is the Almighty. It is a more intense supplication for grace and breakthrough, what we see, that is good in our labour for Him.

1 Cor. 12:11 But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally **as He will.**

1 Cor. 12:31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

Eph. 4:7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

6. The 40 days of fasting of Jesus, when He was tempted by the devil.

Luk. 4:1-15 And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, 2 Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days He did eat nothing: and when they were ended, He afterward hungered. 3 And the devil said unto Him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. 4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word of God. 5 And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto Him

all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. 6 And the devil said unto Him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. 7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. 8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind Me, satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve. 9 And he brought Him to Jerusalem, and set Him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto Him, If thou be the Son of God, cast Thyself down from hence: 10 For it is written, He shall give His angels charge over Thee, to keep Thee: 11 And in [their] hands they shall bear Thee up, lest at any time thou dash Thy foot against a stone. 12 And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. 13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from Him for a season. 14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of Him through all the region round about. 15 And He taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

During these 40 days Jesus sought the powerful leading and anointing of God's Spirit, when He was tempted by satan in the desert during that time. To overcome temptation He fasted during that time, after which He began His labour in Judea and Samaria as a Victor over satan.

So as Jesus we are able to come into prayer and fasting, when we endure great temptations to receive the strong leading and power of the Holy Spirit.

Now rest the 3 last laws, which pursue us to **mortify** our members, which are still upon the earth by continually opening of our body, soul and spirit for the mortifying power of the Holy Spirit, by which He is able to redeem us perfectly from our sinful old man and to be build in us His divine Nature.

Col. 3:5 *Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:*

12. The 8th law

Show that you love God above all by mortifying all sinful, bodily lusts and hunger after wealth and luxury, through opening your heart and life for Jesus and His purifying power, that He may share you His death and resurrection.

Mt. 6:19-34 *Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: 20 But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven (namely: holiness and divine life) , where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: 21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 22 The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. 23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness (this is possible when you abusively suppose that you are pure), how great [is] that darkness! 24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and Mammon. 25 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? 26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? 27 Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? 28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: 29 And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, [shall he] not much more [clothe] you, O ye of little faith? 31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? 32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 33 But seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. 34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day [is] the evil thereof.*

The sinful, carnal man by his self-centred mind, and by the adulterous Mammon, is easily bound to money, materialism, and earthly possessions. He is driven by the worldly desires of his flesh, his worldly soul and spirit.

1 Jn. 2:16-17 *For all that [is] in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. 17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.*

Sometimes a self-centred man gives away a certain amount of money, to get a bigger amount instead, sometimes he searches humanly honor by doing so. Let the Spirit of the Lord redeems us from such a self-centred, sinful behaviour.

Let us therefore open our sinful, earthly nature for Jesus, then He is able to pour in us His forgiving, blessing and purifying Spirit, and to wash us in His dear Blood.

1 Jn. 3:8 *He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might **destroy** the works of the devil.*

1 Pet. 2:24 *Who His own Self bare our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by Whose stripes ye were healed.*

Rom. 8:2 *For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me **free** from the law of sin and death.*

Rom. 8:5-8 *For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7 Because the carnal mind is **enmity against God**: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.*

Rom. 8:10-13 *And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11 But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye **through the Spirit** do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.*

We have to co-operate willingly with this process of dying, which happens by the purifying working of the Fire of His Word and Spirit, by giving away our old, sinful man in this mortifying process, because we have an own will.

Rom. 8:13 *Already cited above*

Col. 3:5 *Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:*

He wants to give us the heavenly gold (picture of His Divine life) instead, and to lead us inward in His heavenly sanctuary, our eternal, heavenly home, and to our heavenly Father.

Rev. 3:18 *I counsel thee to buy of Me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and [that] the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.*

Rom. 8:14 *For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

John 14:6 *Jesus saith unto him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life: no man cometh unto the Father (and so in heaven), but by Me.*

Give money and materialism, food and drinks no priority in our life, but **Jesus alone, for if you do so, you serve idols.**

13. The 9th law

Show that you love God above all by mortifying all sinful, social life of our soul towards your neighbour.

Mt. 7:1-6 *Judge not, that ye be not judged. 2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. 3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam [is] in thine own eye? 5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye. 6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.*

We have, as out of God born again souls, to die to all **sinful relations**, that we have with our fellow-men.

Relation sins

1. Don't judge and condemn each other.

Rom. 2:1-6 *Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things. 2 But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things. 3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? 4 Or despisest thou the riches of His goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance? 5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; 6 Who will render to every man according to his deeds:*

Rom. 14:4 *Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand.*

Rom. 14:10-13 *But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. 11 For it is written, [As] I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall*

bow to Me, and every tongue shall confess to God. 12 So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God. 13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumblingblock or an occasion to fall in [his] brother's way.

Isa. 59:9 Therefore is judgment far from us, neither doth justice overtake us: we wait for light, but behold obscurity; for brightness, [but] we walk in darkness.

It is the Lord alone, Who has to judge us.

1 Cor. 4:4-5 For I know nothing by myself; yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord. 5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

Hebr. 10:30 For we know Him that hath said, Vengeance [belongeth] unto Me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge His people.

We may admonish the other carefully in the love and grace of God.

Mt. 7:5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

Let grace always precede truth, like it was with Jesus, for truth alone may be mortal. Jesus, in His earthly life, didn't judge.

Jn. 8:10-11 When Jesus had lifted up Himself, and saw none but the woman, He said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? 11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

2. Don't harass each other with Bible verses, for this brings only annoyance, and one will turn himself again and rend you like swine.

Mt. 7:6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

3. Don't gossip

This is telling evil things about each other, without this person is present. The one, who gossips and the one, who hears such rumours are equally guilty.

Rom. 3:13-14 Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips:

Let the gossip and the one speaks evil of someone take in consideration, that he won't escape the judgement of God.

Mt. 12:36-37 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. 37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

4. Don't slander

Slander is talking bad lies about another. Also lies, which one has heard as pure truth.

Mt. 5:11-12 Blessed are ye, when [men] shall revile you, and persecute [you], and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for My sake. 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great [is] your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

Titus 3:2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men.

Jude 10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

5. Don't lie to each other.

Col. 3:9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

Meet your appointments, one must be able to rely on your appointments.

Mt. 5:37 But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

6. Be redeemed from the sin of the tongue.

James 3:1-16 My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation. 2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body. 3 Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body. 4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth. 5 Even so the

tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth! 6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell. 7 For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind: 8 But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. 9 Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God. 10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be. 11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? 12 Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh. 13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom. 14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. 15 This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. 16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.

7. Don't take each other as competitors or opponents, but as participants and sometimes as victims of satan. He is the true enemy.

Eph. 6:12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high [places].

8. Don't be jealous of each other like Cain on Abel.

Let the anointing of the other servant of the Lord be more in our eyes than the anointing we have received.

Php. 2:3 [Let] nothing [be done] through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

9. Live in peace with each other

Mt. 5:23-25 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

Hebr. 12:14 Follow peace with all [men], and holiness, **without which no man shall see the Lord:**

10. Don't bring each other into temptation.

Mt. 18:6 But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and [that] he were drowned in the depth of the sea

Don't do fornication or adultery.

1 Cor. 10:8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

Mt. 5:27-28 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her (spiritually) hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

11. Don't tread upon your brother, nor cheat him.

1 Thess. 4:6-7 That no [man] go beyond and defraud his brother in [any] matter: because that the Lord [is] the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified. 7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

12. Don't be irreconcilable with your neighbour.

Bring your irreconcilability in the hands of Jesus. He will redeem you from this sin.

Mk. 11:25-26 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father Which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

13. Don't search for dominion over each other in God's Church, but rather serve each other.

Especially the Church leader has not to do so. Leaders of sects do so.

1 Pet. 5:2-3 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight [thereof], not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; 3 Neither as being lords over [God's] heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

Church-members must not obey their leader as a man, but the Word of God spoken by him. This Word has to be true!

Hebr. 13:7 and 17 Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation. 17 Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.

14. Don't make merchandise of the Gospel.

2 Pet. 2:3 *And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.*

Jn. 2:13-16 *And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, 14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: 15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables; 16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise.*

15. Don't become a fan of human beings also not of the pastor of the assembly, but let us be a fan of (fanatic for) Jesus only

If we are redeemed from our relation sins, the Spirit of God can pour freely the love of God in our hearts, and this love is able to grow to maturity.

Rom. 5:5 *And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.*

Eph. 5:17-19 *Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. 18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit; 19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord;*

Col. 3:14 *And above all these things [put on] charity, which is the bond of perfectness.*

Finally, God's Word gives us the following advice:

Mt. 7:12 *Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.*

14. The 10th law

Show your love for God above all by mortifying in you all human efforts in your spiritual work for the Lord, so He is able to lead you purely by His labour-anointing.

1. The true anointed servant of the Lord Jesus Christ.

When a true servant of the Lord Jesus Christ knows, that the Lord has called him for a certain labour, and he accepts that call, then he surrenders himself completely to the purifying working of God's Word and the Fire of the Spirit of sanctification.

a. He puts for that purpose his body, soul and spirit on the altar of burnt sacrifices of God's Lamb, on the foot of His cross.

This he has to do, so his old, sinful, self-centered nature can be burnt up into ashes.

Ps. 20:3 *Remember all thy offerings, and accept thy burnt sacrifice*

b. He goes faithfully in the cross way, which God's Lamb has made for him.

The leading motive of his life is **sharing the death of God's Lamb**, that mortifies **all his self life**, and resurrects him with the resurrection of Jesus, so that he is able to experience the Lord's labour-anointing, His wisdom, and leading in all the labour for Him, and follow Him perfectly.

Lk. 9:23-25 *And he said to them all, If any man will come after Me, **let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me (up to Golgotha).** 24 For whosoever will save his (sinful) life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for My sake, the same shall save it. 25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?*

c. For this purpose he prays for be baptised in His Spirit and Fire.

Mt. 3:10-12 *And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with **the Holy Ghost, and with fire:** 12 Whose fan is in His hand, and He will throughly purge His floor, and gather His wheat into the garner; but He will burn up the chaff (human's sinful life) with unquenchable fire.*

d. For this purpose he remains praying, searching and knocking on heaven's door till it is opened for him.

Mt. 7:7-11 ***Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:** 8 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. 9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? 10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? 11 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask Him?*

Lk. 11:11-13 *If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if [he ask] a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? 12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? 13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them **that ask Him?***

- e. **Spiritually he goes so through the strait Gate (picture of God's Lamb), and is so planted together in the likeness of His death, and His resurrection.**

Mt. 7:13-14 *Enter ye in at the strait Gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14 Because strait is the Gate, and narrow is the Way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.*

Doing so, he puts on the new man, the nature of His Lord Jesus Christ.

Eph. 4:22-24 *That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts 23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.*

- f. **He only accepts the leading of the Spirit of His Lord Jesus Christ, the pure working and leading of his labour-anointing.**

Rom. 8:14 *For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

Jn. 10:1-15 *Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the Door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. 2 But he that entereth in by the Door is the shepherd of the sheep. 3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. 4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. 5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. 6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them. 7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, **I am the Door of the sheep.** 8 All that ever came before Me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. 9 I am the Door: by Me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. 10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. 11 I am the good Shepherd: the good Shepherd giveth His life for the sheep. 12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. 13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep. 14 I am the good Shepherd, and know My sheep, and am known of Mine. 15 As the Father knoweth Me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down My life for the sheep.*

- g. **Doing so the great Leader of the harvest of souls will give him his labour-anointing, conform His calling.**

That anointing will give him God's love, His wisdom and knowledge for the lost souls to save them out of the power of sin, and His Love and prudence to bring them into God's Kingdom. In short: He will give them the keys of the Kingdom of heaven to open closed, spiritual doors in His wisdom and power in order to destroy the power of the enemy.

Mt. 16:19 *And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of heaven (the spiritual power to labour effectively for Jesus): and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*

- h. **He will send him out into his special field of labour, where he has to labour in, in the power of God's Spirit, conform his calling and anointing.**

Eph. 2:10 *For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, **which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.***

The anointing of Jesus:

Isa. 61:1-3 *The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon Me; because the LORD hath anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He hath sent Me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison (of sin) to them that are bound; 2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; 3 To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy (picture of the Holy Spirit) for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified.*

He shares His anointing with His servants:

Isa. 61:4-11 *And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations. 5 And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your plowmen and your vinedressers. 6 But ye shall be named the priests of the LORD: men shall call you the ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves. 7 For your shame ye shall have double; and for confusion they shall rejoice in their portion: therefore in their land they shall possess the double: everlasting joy shall be unto them. 8 For I*

the LORD love judgment, I hate robbery for burnt offering (picture of partial surrender of sins); and I will direct their work in truth, and I will make an everlasting covenant with them. 9 And their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and their offspring among the people: all that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed which the LORD hath blessed. 10 I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, He hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels. 11 For as the earth bringeth forth her bud, and as the garden causeth the things that are sown in it to spring forth; so the Lord GOD will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations.

Flashes of the end-time.

In the end-time the heavenly High Priest comes **suddenly**, in midnight-darkness, in and through the Holy Spirit, thus **invisible; personally taking the stewardship** over His 7 Churches.

Eph. 1:9-10 Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He hath purposed in Himself: 10 That in the dispensation of the fulness of times (in the end-time) He might gather together in one all things in Christ (He will take the stewardship over all spiritual labour in His own hand), both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in Him

Mal. 3:1-3 Behold, I will send My messenger (picture of all called and anointed servants of the Lord in the end-time) and he shall prepare the way before Me: and the Lord, Whom ye seek, shall **suddenly** come to His temple (in and through the Holy Spirit), even the Messenger of the (Blood-)covenant, Whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. 2 But who may abide the day of His coming? and who shall stand when He appeareth? for He is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap: 3 And He shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and He shall purify the sons of Levi (picture of all true servants of the Lord), and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.

Read Revelation, the chapters 1-3.

Mt. 25:6 And **at midnight** (in midnight circumstances) there was a cry made, Behold, the Bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet Him.

Isa. 60:1-3 Arise, shine; for thy Light is come, and the glory of the LORD is risen upon thee. 2 For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and His glory **shall be seen** upon thee. 3 And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.

He will celebrate His bridal-festival with His Bride (the wise part of the true Church), after the needy adoptions and perfections of the wise part of the Church, and unite Himself with her.

Rev. 12:1 And there appeared a great wonder in heaven (in the Kingdom of heaven on earth, which is the Church); a woman (the Bride of God's Lamb) clothed with the sun (picture of the Father), and the moon (picture of the Son) under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars (picture of the Spirit)

Rev. 19:1-9 And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God: 2 For true and righteous are His judgments: for He hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of His servants at her hand. 3 And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever. 4 And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts (living creatures) fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia. 5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye His servants, and ye that fear Him, both small and great. 6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. 7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready. 8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. 9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

He will empower and glorify His Bride and lead many of His Church to complete victory over satan and sin.

Rev. 12:11 And they (the victors over sin and devil in the end time) overcame him (satan) by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their (sinful) lives unto the death (till these lives are fully mortified) .

Obadja 21 And saviours shall come up on mount Zion to judge the mount of Esau; and the kingdom shall be the LORD'S.

He will use His Bride also as an instrument to bring about **the great world wide revival**, so that numerous souls can be lead inward into the Kingdom of heaven.

Rev. 7:9 After this I beheld, and, lo, a **great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues**, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands

2. The false labourers, the “holy” devils.

This group of labourers are instruments of the devil. Their behaviour is pious, they talk a lot about Jesus, and about the love of God, but their charisma comes directly out of hell. So they have an anti-anointing, and are “holy” devils. By satan they receive a place in the midst of the Church **as leaders!** They preach half-truths and lies to bring confusion and misleading in the Church of the Lord. Some of them develop themselves as sect leaders.

Mt. 7:15-20 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. 16 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

Mt. 13:24-30 Another parable put He forth unto them, saying, The Kingdom of heaven (on earth, which is the Church) is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: 25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. 26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. 27 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? 28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? 29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

2 Cor. 11:13-15 For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. 14 And no marvel; for satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. 15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

They form together “the overspreading of abominations” of Daniel 9:27. These so-called labourers of Christ bring by their false doctrines no conversions. They have an aversion of walking in the way of the cross. They say that Jesus has achieved the redemption-work on His cross, and that we have nothing to do then believe. God’s grace comes then automatically to the believer, so they say. Other false workers deny the shed blood of God’s Lamb. They all are enemies of the cross of Jesus Christ.

Php. 3:18 For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ:

This group of false workers results in the end-time in the workers, who have their have their final form in the **false prophet** and the **anti-christ**. When they exercise miracles and signs, they do so by the powers of hell.

*Matth. 24:5, 11 and 24 For many shall come in My Name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive **many**. 11 And **many** false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive **many**. 24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.*

2 Th. 2:7-12 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only He (the Holy Spirit and His called and anointed servants) who now letteth will let, until He be taken out of the way. 8 And then shall that wicked (the anti-christian power: the anti-christ and the false prophet) be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His coming: 9 Even him, whose coming is after the working of satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, 10 And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: 12 That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

3. The anointed labourers, who are fallen in sin.

This group of labourers of Jesus Christ starts in the Spirit, but doesn’t remain in the Spirit. They finish in their flesh!

Mt. 7:21-23 Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of heaven (on earth, which is the Church); but he that doeth the will of My Father Which is in heaven. 22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name? and in Thy Name have cast out devils? and in Thy Name done many wonderful works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity.

Rom. 8:5 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.

2 Pet. 2:1-22 But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. 2 And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. 3 And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not. 4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of

darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; 5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; 6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; 7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: 8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;) 9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: 10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities. 11 Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. 12 But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; 13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; 14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: 15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; 16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. 17 These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever. 18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error. 19 While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. 20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. 21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. 22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

1. They are money-minded. And make of the Church a merchandise (verse. 3).
2. They slander the things, they don't know (verse 12).
3. They walk after the flesh, in the lusts of their uncleanness (verse 10), having eyes full of adultery (verse 14).
4. They are wells without water (verse 17-18).
5. They allure them, who hear through the lusts of their flesh (verse 18-19).
6. They have left their first love, and follow again their fleshly lusts (Rev.2:4).
7. They are hypocrites (Jer. 23:11).
8. They prophesy out of their own heart (Jer. 23:16).
9. Through their preaching they are able to contaminate spiritually their hearers with the sin, which rules over them. This is the same spiritual power, which rules over members of a sect, by which they follow **their leader** unconditionally.

Prov. 18:21 Death and life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof.

When a called and anointed person stray from the path of sanctification, the calling and anointing remain, which keep working, because Gods calling is without repentance, although the salvation bringing grace has been taken from such a person. Example out of the Old Covenant are: Samson, king Saul, and king Solomon. An example out of the New Covenant is mentioned by Jesus in Mt. 7:21-23.

*Rom. 11:29 For the gifts and calling of God are **without repentance**.*

4. Labourers, who are not called by Jesus, who work for Jesus in their own human strength.

This group of labourers the Lord Jesus has never called, and thus has never been anointed to a certain spiritual labour, but they have put themselves under a certain spiritual yoke. The Lord Jesus compared them with a fool, who has built his house on sand.

Mt. 7:26-27 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

With other words: Such workers think, that they are able to build the Church of the Lord Jesus in their own human power and with human wisdom. They doesn't take into account with satan as their enemy. Jesus warns them that this is foolishness.

*Jn. 15:5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in Me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for **without Me ye can do nothing** (nothing which brings eternal fruit).*

Ps. 127:1-2 Except the LORD build the house (the Church), they labour in vain that build it: except the LORD keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain. 2 It is vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late, to eat the bread of sorrows: for so He giveth His beloved (in their) sleep.

1 Cor. 3:9-15 For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building. 10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation,

and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. 11 For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is **Jesus Christ**. 12 Now if any man build upon this Foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; 13 Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. 14 If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. 15 If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

All their labour is in vain, and bears not **eternal** fruit. Satan laughs at their labour, moreover he blesses their attempts. Maybe that their labour is successful in their own eyes, but when the fire of temptation comes over their work, it will banish, because they have build with wood, hay and stubble.

Another Word of God that warns such workers is:

Rom. 8:5-9 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7 Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His.

Flesh resists Jesus, God's High Priest always, and never pleases Him.

True labourers of the Lord Jesus always build the Church on the Rock (picture of the Lord Jesus Himself).

Mt. 7:24-25 Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of Mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock (picture of the Lord Jesus Christ): 25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

They know, that they are only servants, labourers together with God, that they are but service batches of the Holy Spirit, they know to obey His leading and Word.

Lk. 17:10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

Flesh is often ambitious of power.

1 Pet. 5:2-3 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; 3 Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being examples to the flock.

Ex. 17:8-16 Then came Amalek, and fought with Israel in Rephidim. 9 And Moses said unto Joshua, Choose us out men, and go out, fight with Amalek: to morrow I will stand on the top of the hill with the rod of God in mine hand. 10 So Joshua did as Moses had said to him, and fought with Amalek: and Moses, Aaron, and Hur went up to the top of the hill. 11 And it came to pass, when Moses held up his hand, that Israel prevailed: and when he let down his hand, Amalek prevailed. 12 But Moses' hands were heavy; and they took a stone, and put it under him, and he sat thereon; and Aaron and Hur stayed up his hands, the one on the one side, and the other on the other side; and his hands were steady until the going down of the sun. 13 And Joshua discomfited Amalek and his people with the edge of the sword. 14 And the LORD said unto Moses, Write this for a memorial in a book, and rehearse it in the ears of Joshua: for I will utterly put out the remembrance of Amalek from under heaven. 15 And Moses built an altar, and called the name of it Jehovahnissi: 16 For he said, Because the LORD hath sworn that the LORD will have war with Amalek from generation to generation.

Amalek is for such labourers a classic example. His hand always stretches out to Jesus' throne, as so many sect leaders and Church leaders do. Flesh looks always for self honour, and builds his own kingdom.

Mt. 21:33-45 Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country: 34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it. 35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. 36 Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise. 37 But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son. 38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance. 39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him. 40 When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen? 41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons. 42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The Stone which the builders rejected, the Same is become the Head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? 43 Therefore say I unto you, The Kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. 44 And whosoever shall fall on this Stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. 45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that He spake of them.

Flesh always looks for enrichment of himself.

2 Pet. 2:3 And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.

Further is flesh always jealous of the other labourer of the Lord Jesus. Especially when the other labourer is more successful. A classic example of jealousy is Cain, being jealous of his brother Abel. So were the Pharisees and scribes jealous of Jesus. They therefore killed Him.

The end of part 3

Table of contents

The sermon of the Lord Jesus Christ on the mount:.....	3
Part 1.....	3
The ladder of God's blessing bringing grace	3
1. Introduction.....	3
God's purpose with His covenant children.....	3
The Person of the Lord Jesus Christ.....	4
Jesus' Divine heritage.....	5
2. The statements of the Lord Jesus, forming the (9+1) steps of the ladder of His blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	5
3. The 1 st step of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	6
Blessed are the poor in spirit.....	6
The acknowledgement of the own sinful state and poverty of real, spiritual life.....	6
Jesus Christ, the only by God given Redeemer and Saviour, given to the whole of mankind.....	7
God's anointed Word reveals the poverty of our inner man. His Word, anointed by the Spirit of God is our eyesalve, which takes away our spiritual blindness.....	7
What we have to do, when God's light comes over us.....	8
4. The 2 nd step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	9
Blessed are they that mourn.....	9
5. The 3 rd step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	11
Blessed are the meek.....	11
The meek acceptance of God's sharing in the death and resurrection of the Lamb of God. Beginning of the redemption of the might of sin.....	11
What we have to do, because we have to co-operate with Him.....	11
6. The 4 th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	16
Blessed are they, which do hunger and thirst after righteousness.....	16
7 The 5 th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	18
Blessed are the merciful.....	18
The Divine Nature.....	19
8. The 6 th step of the ladder of God' blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	21
Blessed are the pure in heart.....	21
This perfect pureness is necessary.....	23
9. The 7 th step of the ladder of blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	24
Blessed are the peacemakers.....	24
10. The 8 th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	27
Blessed are they, which are persecuted for righteousness' sake.....	27
11. The 9 th step of the ladder of God's blessing (salvation) bringing grace.....	31
Blessed they, when men shall revile them, and persecute them, and shall say all manner of evil against them, for the Lord's sake.....	31
12. The 10 th and last blessing (salvation) bringing grace of God, meant for the end-time.....	32
Blessed are they, which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb.....	32
1. God's end-time creation: the Bride of the Lamb of God – the New Jerusalem – who is created “in the last days” here on earth.....	32
2. The preparation of the Bride of the Lamb (the New Jerusalem), which in the end-time has to be build on earth.....	33
3. The wedding festival of the Lamb of God. The spiritual unity of the Bride and God's Lamb, of the Body of Christ (the Bride-Church with its spiritual Head).....	35
4. Now the time of labour is there, for which the wedding (unification) on earth has to be achieved.....	35
5. Israel's role in the great worldwide revival.....	36

6.	When the great tribulation begins, the Bride, herself, in the power of the Spirit, will flee to the desert. The Bride is then still in an unchanged body, and like Philip (Acts 8:39-40) she will be transported up to her shelter place in the wilderness, where she will be kept hidden for the terror of the anti-christ during 3½ year.	38
7.	The bodily return of the Lord Jesus Christ on the clouds of heaven.	38
Part 2	39
	Our earthly Divine calling: "And <i>you</i> shall be <i>My</i> witnesses."	39
1.	You are the light of the world	39
2.	The purpose of anointing	41
3.	Gifts of the Spirit; ministrations of the Lord, actions of God.	44
4.	Gifts of the Spirit.	46
	The gifts of the Word.....	47
	Gifts that work wonders and signs.	48
	Prayer gifts.....	49
5.	Gifts of the Spirit without the fruit of the Spirit are no guarantee for our personal salvation.	50
6.	The end-time anointing.....	50
	The end-time ministry of the chosen of the repentant Israel.	53
	The great end-time anointing is for the salvation of the world.....	53
Part 3	55
	The 10 fulfilled (perfect) laws of the kingdom of heaven on earth (the Church) given by our Lord Jesus Christ.	55
1.	Introductory word.....	55
2.	Schematic composition.....	57
3.	Further introductory words.....	58
	The Sabbath day.....	58
	The Kingdom of God begins invisible, deep in our heart.	58
	The sevenfold assignment of the labour of God's Lamb, achieved at Golgotha, in order to build this labour in us, in our born again souls.....	58
	The beginning verses, which introduce these 10 commandments (laws).	59
4.	The 1 st law	59
	Love your brother and sister with the love of Christ Jesus.....	59
	1. We must not do righteousness in human power, but always act in the power of the Lord.....	59
	2. We must not kill each other.....	59
	3. We have to let the Lord build His love in our heart.	60
	4. We must not have evil thoughts about our brothers and sisters.	60
	5. Also talking scandals about our brother and sister in Christ is sin, so putting him/her down, and abusing him/her is punishable with God.	60
	6. Let us quickly come to peace with our brother an sister in Christ.	61
	7. We have to forgive them, who did evil against us. If we don't do so, we blockade our own salvation.	61
5.	The 2 nd law.....	61
	Love your wife/husband with the love of Christ.....	61
	The institution, which a Christian must have in regard with sexuality and marriage.....	61
	Unholy sex.	62
	The Christian marriage.	62
	No divorce in the christian marriage-life.....	63
	No unequal yoke in the christian marriage.	63
6.	The 3 rd law	63
	Don't cheat your neighbour, love him/her as yourself.	63
	Speak with your neighbour always the truth.....	64
	However your truth must not be killing.	64

Let us banish each form of slander and gossip out of our life.....	64
7. The 4 th law	65
Love your enemies with the love of God.....	65
1. The law of God out of the old covenant.....	65
2. God's law in the new covenant.....	65
3. Perfection is, by the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, possible already here on earth.....	66
4. The development to perfection in Christ does not happen automatically.....	66
5. This perfection cannot be realised by God's Spirit before the end-time, because God's everlasting Gospel is <i>then</i> preached, without restrictions and misconceptions, in the full power of the Holy Spirit. Moreover then He will pour (the light of) His Spirit upon all flesh. He then will be accepted by many believers.....	67
8. The other 6 laws	68
9. The 5 th law.....	68
Love God above all by opening your heart for His financial anointing.....	68
God's law regarding our financial sacrifices in the New Covenant with Him.....	68
The law of the financial sacrifice in the Old Covenant.....	69
Some verses more regarding our financial sacrifices.....	70
10. The 6 th law.....	70
Love God above all and open your heart for His prayer-anointing.....	70
The model-prayer, which our Lord Jesus has taught us.....	70
1. To Whom we have to pray.....	70
2. We pray first for the general needs, the needs, which apply to every child of God.....	70
3. The prayers to the Father for answers to our personal needs.....	72
4. Adoration, thanksgiving, glorifying and praise.....	77
11. The 7 th law	77
Love God above all by opening your body for His fast-anointing.....	77
1. The general meaning of fasting.....	77
2. The aim of our fast must be the breaking and redemption of our sinful nature.....	78
3. We fast to receive God's promise of perfect redemption and purification mentioned in Eph. 5:26-27, in order that we are spotless and without wrinkle, already here on earth.....	78
4. The aim of fasting is a more intimate fellowship with the Lamb of God.....	79
5. A further aim of fasting is getting more power and anointing of the Holy Spirit, getting more breakthrough from the Spirit in our earthly labour.....	79
6. The 40 days of fasting of Jesus, when He was tempted by the devil.....	79
12. The 8 th law.....	80
Show that you love God above all by mortifying all sinful, bodily lusts and hunger after wealth and luxury, through opening your heart and life for Jesus and His purifying power, that He may share you His death and resurrection.....	80
13. The 9 th law	81
Show that you love God above all by mortifying all sinful, social life of our soul towards your neighbour.....	81
14. The 10 th law	84
Show your love for God above all by mortifying in you all human efforts in your spiritual work for the Lord, so He is able to lead you purely by His labour-anointing.....	84
1. The true anointed servant of the Lord Jesus Christ.....	84
2. The false labourers, the "holy" devils.....	87
3. The anointed labourers, who are fallen in sin.....	87
4. Labourers, who are not called by Jesus, who work for Jesus in their own human strength.....	88
Table of contents.....	91